Key to Chrysal
vol. 4

Page		
4.	Old Dowager. ———	Mrs Horner
5	Pitched upon a Mr relation ..	D. Glchester
9	Acquaintance with a Nobleman ——	late Duke of Richmond
12	First personages: ——	D. of Cumberland
18	Profitable employment ..	Commiss.rs of Musters
19	Recourse to Means ..	Forging a lease
23	An essential part ..	Gen.l of the Army for life.
24	But more profit ..	Paymaster of the Army
25	Those events. ——	Death of Geo. 2
26	Perfidy of One ..	Mr Calcraft
28	Possession of the same person ..	L.d Sandwich
——	a person of distinguished learning ..	Dr. Sum.
29	An only daughter ———	Neice
46	A Lady whom he addressed ..	Ly. Mansel
50	Debilitated debauchées ..	Sir T. Mansel

56 One of her admirers — Gen. Geo. Boscawen

67 A brother of the person — Mr Burgh

69 A near relation — Cap. Wheler of the Isis

71 His success with one — Miss Stephenson

95 Crowned head — Fleur de Lys

— My new Master — Mr Prestage the Auctioneer

136 Of the Author — Churchill

163 The most intimate acquaintance — Mr Wilkes

166 Political pamphlet — North Briton

175 The Gentleman whom he went to wait upon — Lord Temple

180 To a Magistrate — L. Halifax

181 His judges — Ds Halifax & Egremont

186 Certain Immunities — Privilege of Parliamt

— Integrity of the Magistrates — L. C.J. Pratt

— Former Occasions — Cases of Dr Henry Sibbaire, taken upon Genl Warrants when Mr Pratt was Attorney General

190 Attack upon the Minister — L. Bute

191 A countryman of the Ministers. — Capt. Forbes

197 A person was involved. — Mr. Martin

200 An able & upright Magistrate. — D. Ch. J. Pratt

201 A Clergyman. — Mr. Kedgell

203 His Questions came punctually. — Doctor Douglass

204 Assistance of one of the Latter. — Mr. Leach, Printer

205 Of such a patron as yours. — Lord Bute

— Leading a Bear — Travelling as tutor to Lord Pulteney.

— That Impostor. — Mr. A. Hamilton Bowyer

207 Tearing off the Veil — Writing the History of the Popes.

208 Two silly Impostors — Lauder & Eliz. Canning

211 I have something to shew you — Essay on Women

— Which the gentleman we have been talking of — Mr. Wilkes

218 The honor of one of them — Bp. of Gloucester

220	One of his Tradesman —	A Bookseller
223	That a positive Law —	Marriage Act
227	By a gentleman of his acquaintance —	Lord Delorraine
250	A Lady of large fortune —	Hon. Mrs Knight
256	Possession of my new Master —	Sir Chas Coote KB.
271	Given to a Briton —	D. of Cumberland
276	Giving up the countries —	Convention of Closterloven —
277	Given to a German —	Prince Ferdinand
—	A Commander of their own —	late Duke of Marlborough


BRITISH MUSEUM

12613.c.20.

CHRYSAL;

OR,

THE ADVENTURES

OF

A GUINEA.

WHEREIN ARE EXHIBITED

VIEWS OF SEVERAL STRIKING SCENES,

WITH

CURIOUS AND INTERESTING ANECDOTES

OF THE

MOST NOTED PERSONS IN EVERY RANK OF LIFE,

WHOSE HANDS IT PASSED THROUGH,

IN AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND GERMANY, AND PORTUGAL.

BY AN ADEPT.

—— Hold the Mirrour up to Nature,
To ſhow Vice its own Image, Virtue its own Likeneſs,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His Form and Preſſure. SHAKSPEARE

Qui capit, ille facit.

A NEW EDITION.

VOL. IV.

LONDON:
PRINTED FOR J. F. AND C. RIVINGTON; G. ROBINSON, T. CADELL; T. EVANS; AND R. BALDWIN.
M DCC LXXXIII.

BRITISH MUSEUM

CONTENTS of VOL. IV.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL *continues the account of the members. The hiſtory of a remarkable perſon is given, for a remarkable purpoſe. His pleaſures bring him into diſtreſs, from which he extricates himſelf, by making them ſubſervient to his intereſt, and gets into a good* KEEPING. *Not content with the mother he caſts his eye upon the daughter alſo, but is diſappointed, and forced to take up with a ſhare of her fortune, for procuring her in marriage for another. He reſolves to be* A GREAT MAN; *and for that purpoſe breaks with his* KEEPER, *when he has got from her all ſhe had to give.* Page 1.

CHAP. II.

Continued. He begins his ſcheme ſucceſsfully, by ſtealing a marriage. His late KEEPER *makes an artful demand of all the preſents ſhe had given him,*

him, which he anſwers as artfully. He advances in his ſcheme by ſteps exactly in his character, and gets into favour with a great perſon. CHRYSAL *makes ſome remarks on the origin of the affections of the human mind, and the different manner of breeding men and horſes, with the conſequence.* Page 8

CHAP III.

Continued. He practiſes a ſucceſsful method for gaining the confidence of his new Patron, which he turns to good account. Hiſtory of the lover who ſucceeded him in the good graces of his late KEEPER. *He ſtrives to prevent his taking advantage of his influence over her; and finding he fails in that, fools him into diſtreſs, which brings his life in his power. He ſlights many motives, which might have had weight with others, and takes advantage of the opportunity to get rid of him, and all further trouble about him. He continues to dupe him till the laſt moment, when his eyes are opened, and all comes out.* 14

CHAP. IV.

Continued. A view of his political character introduces a maxim not ſufficiently attended to He fails in a great ſtroke, and makes ſo many wrong ones, that he is kicked out of power, and

and forced to be content with profit, which he purſues through thick and thin. An unhappy event gives him an opportunity of ſhowing his ingratitude to his late Patron, on the merit of which he riſes to higher power than ever, which he wiſely exerts behind the curtain, and leaves HIS TOOLS *to bear the blame. An account of the juſt fruits of ſo much ſucceſs concludes his ſtory.* Page 22

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL *leaves the convent. His maſter proceeds in character. He practiſes a new manner of courtſhip; and ſignaliſes his talents for intrigue, by debauching the daughter of his friend Her diſtreſs, when too late, gives him ſome ſlight qualms of conſcience; but he ſoon recovers, and goes on in his enterpriſe.* 28

CHAP. VI.

Continued. CHRYSAL'*s maſter makes his triumph publick, by ſeducing his new miſtreſs away from her father's houſe. The manner in which he impoſed upon them both to effect this; with the conſolation he gave her for ſome natural conſequences of his gallantry. His triumph is completed by her going upon the town, and her father's breaking his heart.* 33

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

" CHRYSAL's *maſter pays his court to a great per-*
" *ſon, who ſeems not much to reliſh his humour,*
" *and expreſſes ſome unfaſhionable ſentiments con-*
" *cerning polite pleaſures. In the courſe of a*
" *regular progreſſion* CHRYSAL *comes into the*
" *poſſeſſion of a Beau.*" *Hiſtory of a Beau, with a journal of his manner of life for one day.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, in a common way, for that of* A LADY OF FASHION. 40

CHAP. VIII.

Hiſtory of CHRYSAL's *new miſtreſs. She is brought into diſtreſs by her beauty, from which a lucky interview relieves her. The danger of arguing in favour of inclination againſt reaſon. Her friend puts her to ſchool, to learn manners, and afterwards marries her. His family ſhow impotent reſentment, at which he is ſo enraged, that he makes his will, by which he leaves her his whole fortune; and then dies. An uncommon inſtance of the good-nature of the world.* 48

CHAP. IX.

The common conſequence of over-doing things. Her huſband's relations find out a flaw in his will. The comfort of having good lawyers to keep up a client's ſpirits. For the advantage of having two ſtrings to her bow, ſhe enters into an engage-
ment:

ment of marriage, under a heavy penalty. The event of her law-ſuit ſhows the prudence of this precaution. She is caſt; her lover flies off, and ſhe ſues him for the penalty of his engagement. He begs the money among his friends, and then by a nice fineſſe plays her own game back upon her, and flings her off with half. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* Page 56

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome out-of-the-way remarks on matrimony. Deſcription and hiſtory of his new maſter.* CHRYSAL *vindicates his uſing a common expreſſion. His maſter's firſt riſe from a beggar to a foot-boy. He gains his maſter's favour, of which he makes the uſe natural to be expected from his firſt education. Some account of a relation of his* PRINCIPAL's. *The danger of giving advice.* CHRYSAL's *maſter inſinuates himſelf into the* COLONEL's *liking, and undermines his principal in his regard.* 64.

CHAP. XI.

Further account of the COLONEL. CHRYSAL's *maſter, in conjunction with a female aſſociate proper for his purpoſe, completes his ſcheme of*

alienating the COLONEL's *regard from his family, of which he gives a proof of a most extraordinary nature. A remarkable instance of* CHRYSAL's *master's talents for a particular kind of wit, with a striking account of the worthy manner in which he and his fair associate acquitted themselves of the trust reposed in them by the* COLONEL. Page 72

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL's *master receives an account of the death of the Colonel. He finds after much deliberation that he cannot fling his worthy associate out of the whole spoil, and therefore prudently resolves to share it with her by a marriage, of which he draws a comfortable picture. He urges his suit, and she strives to evade it, by arguments consistent with both their characters. He carries his point in a particular manner.* 78

CHAP. XIII.

Account of the methods which CHRYSAL's *master took to obviate the effects of his principal's resentment, with the characteristick conversation that passed between them, on the former's avowing the colonel's will.* CHRYSAL's *master over-shoots his mark, and provokes his principal to do more than he ever intended. An uncommon instance of the justice of the world.* CHRYSAL's *master obliges the lady to court him in her turn, and at length marries*

marries her. The consequences of such a marriage, and fruits of the success of all their schemes.
Page 85

CHAP. XIV.

CHRYSAL's *master designs to set up a coach; but wants a material article towards making a proper figure with it. He consults with a* HERALD, *who gives him an elaborate dissertation, not the most pleasing to him, on* COATS OF ARMS, *and the modern methods of making them, in which he unfolds many curious mysteries, and undertakes at last, on proper encouragement, to make him a gentleman.* CHRYSAL *changes his service. Conversation between his new master, and an* ANTIQUARIAN. *Curious arguments, by which he proves the genuineness and importance of certain relicks of antiquity.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.* 92

CHAP. XV.

A modest method of seeking fame. CHRYSAL's *master confirms himself in his resolution to gratify an uncommon curiosity, by a great example. The judicious and learned manner in which he classed and entered his new acquisitions. Curious remark on the value of books. He goes to an auction, where he makes an extraordinary purchase.* CHRYSAL *changes his service, for that of the Auctioneer. Specimen and*

effects of his new master's eloquence, learning, and judgement. Page 105

CHAP. XVI.

An unsavoury accident stops him short in his harangue. He turns off the jest with another, and accounts learnedly for what has happened. The real cause and consequence of that accident. Reflexions on auctioneering, and the causes of its success. 113

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's *master is visited by a* CONNOISSEUR, *to whom he gives a short receipt how to make his pictures sell, and makes some striking remarks, on the disregard people show for their families, which send his visitor away in a huff.* 118

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL's *master receives an agreeable summons. His encomiums on the generosity of merchants, and account of the way many of them acquire reputation for taste and judgement. He meets the merchant, who consults him on a different branch of his business from that which he expected.* CHRYSAL's *master, in order to encourage his customer, gives a large account of his own abilities, and opens some curious secrets in his business. A bargain is struck, to the mutual satisfaction of both parties; and* CHRYSAL *changes his service for that of the merchant.* 123

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

Motive of CHRYSAL's *new maſter for making ſuch a bargain, with the many and great advantages a merchant may make of being in the houſe. A ſhort ſketch of an election. The curious method which* CHRYSAL's *maſter took, to evade the laws againſt bribery. He takes offenſe at the unreaſonable preſumption of his conſtituents, and reſolves to make the moſt of the bargain he has bought from them, which by a ſingular piece of management he propoſes to make cheaper than they think.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of the idol of an inn. The conſequences of electioneering. Some account of* CHRYSAL's *new miſtreſs. He quits her ſervice for a curious purpoſe. An expedient to prevent the ſale of poiſon for mind and body.* CHRYSAL *again changes his ſervice.*

Page 129

CHAP. XX.

Account of CHRYSAL's *new maſter, his heroick ſpirit, and reſolution to puſh for a penſion or a pillory. Meeting between him and a poet, who turns the tables upon him. A curious method of forming a judgement of a work of genius.* CHRYSAL's *maſter is beaten out of all his art, and for once buys a book by quality, not quantity. The value of an authour's name.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 137

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XXI.

Some account of the company to which CHRYSAL's *new maſter went. His behaviour to a young female, who accoſted him in his way home. He takes her to a tavern for an uncommon purpoſe, where he treats her uncommonly, and goes home with her, from as uncommon a motive. Account of what he ſaw in her habitation, with the manner in which he behaved there. He takes another lodging for the whole family, where he leaves them abruptly, to ſave himſelf and them trouble.*

Page 143

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL *gives ſome account of his maſter. Reaſon of his having been bred to, and miſcarried in a particular profeſſion. Intereſting remarks on the different kinds of merit neceſſary to eminence in different profeſſions, confirmed by ſtriking inſtances of the ſucceſs in each. Natural conſequence of his being forced into a profeſſion againſt his inclination. He is compelled by diſtreſs to exert his abilities. Contradictious in his character, and the particular turn of his works accounted for. He viſits his new family. Affecting ſtory of an officer.* Page 153

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

CHRYSAL's *master carries him to visit an old acquaintance, who behaves in character, on hearing the officer's story, and surprises* CHRYSAL's *master with an account of his having turned* PATRIOT. *The general motive for such a step; with some remarks on the difference between practice and profession, in different instances. Insignificancy of private characters in attacks upon a ministry, and why. Reflexions on the origin and use of* SATIRE, *and the abuse of the terms* GOOD *and* ILL-NATURE, *with the reason why so many cry out against satire.* CHRYSAL *changes his service in a common way.* Page 165

CHAP. III.

CHRYSAL *sums up the character of his late master. Different opinions for and against the propriety and benefit of* SATIRE. *The former supported by good authority. Reason of some inconveniencies attending the indulgence of such a turn. Character of* CHRYSAL's *new master concluded from a former sketch. He waits upon his Patron. Character of him, with his motives for such a patronage. He gives striking reasons for objecting to some parts of* CHRYSAL's *master's pamphlet,*

which the other makes ſome weak attempts to vindicate. CHRYSAL's *maſter enjoys the pleaſure of tracing his own fame.* Page 174

CHAP. IV.

CHRYSAL's *maſter receives an unwelcome viſit, at an unſeaſonable time. His extraordinary behaviour before his ſuperiours. He is ſent to priſon.* CHRYSAL *makes ſome unpopular remarks, on certain intereſting ſubjects. Conſequences of his maſter's impriſonment, with an account of his behaviour in it.* 182

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL's *maſter is viſited in priſon by his patron; and from what motives. His conduct, on being ſet at liberty, and the conſequences of it. Remarkable grounds on which he was ſet at liberty, with a conjecture at the reaſon of fixing upon them.* CHRYSAL *makes an enquiry into certain matters, much talked of, and little underſtood.* 187

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL's *maſter takes a foreign tour. Remarks upon national reflexions, and attacks upon private characters.* CHRYSAL's *maſter is called to an account for certain improper liberties, by a very improper*

improper perſon, whom he treats with uncommon propriety. CHRYSAL *makes ſome out-of-the-way reflexions on a queſtion much canvaſſed to little purpoſe.* Page 192

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL*'s maſter's late conduct draws him into a new ſcrape, in which he comes off but ſecond-beſt. He takes advantage of his misfortune to make his eſcape from a greater. He ſuffers the reſentment of his enemies, as far as they can reach him; and meets from his friends the fate of all uſeleſs tools, after having ſerved them with improbable ſucceſs. A ſtriking inſtance of the advantage of an upright judge, and equal laws.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 199

CHAP. VIII.

Reaſon of the joy with which CHRYSAL *was received by his new maſter. Account of a curious, though not uncommon way of getting a living. Converſation between* CHRYSAL*'s maſter and his gueſt. They compare notes on their different attempts in the literary trade.* CHRYSAL*'s maſter is encouraged by his friend from his own example. A remarkable account of a certain matter that made much noiſe.* 205

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's *master makes some striking remarks on his friend's account of this mysterious transaction, and draws inferences from it, not commonly attended to. He entertains his friend with a curious song, who makes an important hit, just in his own character, upon it.* CHRYSAL's *master boggles a little at first, at his friend's proposal, but is encouraged by his example to undertake it.* Page 212

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL's *master pursues his scheme, and violates moral honesty to serve the cause of virtue and religion. He waits upon his patron, who honestly refuses a character to which he knows he has no right; but undertakes the affair from a more prevailing motive, in which he is remarkably assisted by another person of less modesty, who pleads the cause of religion and virtue in vain, till honour at length turns the scale in their favour.* CHRYSAL's *master is disappointed in his hopes, and makes use of an expedient in character, to escape from the just reward of all his labours.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.* 217

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

CHRYSAL *again changes his ſervice. His new maſter is obliged to pay expedition fees, to get over artificial delays. He and his miſtreſs ſet out on a long journey, to do what might have been better done at home.* CHRYSAL *makes ſome intereſting reflexions on a moſt important ſubject. Story of* CHRYSAL's *maſter.* CHRYSAL *continues his reflexions on the ſame ſubject, which he conſiders in a further and moſt affecting point of view.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* Page 224

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL's *new maſter ſtrikes out an adventure. He is ſmitten with a girl in a travelling-waggon, and changes his appearance, to get admiſſion to her. Account of the company in the waggon. A good-natured miſtake of one of the paſſengers gives occaſion to a broil, which is put an end to by an accident that does not mend the matter.* 231

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter experiences ſome comfortable conſequences from the obliging diſpoſition of the waggoner. He purſues his deſign, by paying*

paying common civility to his miſtreſs's mother. Converſation and behaviour of the company. CHRYSAL's *maſter, in the purſuit of his deſign, meets an adventure that cools his paſſion, and reaſſembles the company, when they are all like to be at a fault, till one of them luckily hits off the ſcent.*

Page 237

CHAP. XIV.

The advantage of a ready aſſurance. The methodiſt accounts curiouſly for what he has done; and turning the tables upon CHRYSAL's *maſter charges him with robbery, who is thereupon obliged to diſcover himſelf, but is contradicted by one of the company, who boaſts of a curious acquaintance with him in his own character. He is luckily recognized by a footman, whoſe maſter extricates him from his diſtreſs, and makes out the miſtakes that had cauſed ſo much confuſion.* 243

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL *gives a ſtriking account of his maſter. He arrives in* London, *and pays a viſit to his miſtreſs. His curious method of courting. His miſtreſs makes him a preſent of half her fortune beforehand, in return for which he promiſes to marry her next day, and then goes to his girl. Difference in his behaviour to the two naturally accounted for.*

An

An uncommon gueſt at a wedding, with as uncommon a manner of celebrating a nuptial-night, ſhow a ſtill more uncommon inſtance of matrimonial complaiſance. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* Page 250

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome reflexions, not likely to be much regarded. His maſter pays a love-viſit to a young lady, whoſe father interpoſes unpolitely, and makes ſome out-of-the-way objections.* CHRYSAL's *maſter hits upon a ſcheme for getting over them. He propoſes marriage on certain terms, which are agreed to, and the day fixed at a little diſtance.* 257

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter is privately married. Not ſatisfied with one wife for love, he wants another for money. He propoſes the matter to his wife, on whoſe refuſal, he diſcloſes his grand ſcheme; in which, deep as it is laid, he has the mortification to find himſelf anticipated, and his own weapons turned upon himſelf. Conſequences of this diſcovery.* CHRYSAL's *maſter takes a common method of ſilencing ſcandal.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 264

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL *gives an account of certain intereſting occurrences. An extraordinary definition of a common*

common word. Great expectations disappointed. The consequence of planning in the closet the operations of the field, with the origin of that sagacious practice. Page 272

CHAP. XIX.

Continued. The natural event of such a situation. The general, victorious over himself, quits the pursuit of military glory for the practice of the virtues of peace. Perfidy of the enemy justly punished. The army is formed again under the command of a GERMAN, *and a sugar plum given to the* ENGLISH *to stop their mouths at such an insult.* 277

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE ADVENTURES OF

A GUINEA.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL *continues the account of the members. The hiſtory of a remarkable perſon is given for a remarkable purpoſe. His pleaſures bring him into diſtreſs, from which he extricates himſelf by making them ſubſervient to his intereſt, and gets into a good* KEEPING. *Not content with the mother he caſts his eye upon the daughter alſo, but is diſappointed, and forced to take up with a ſhare of her fortune, for procuring her in marriage for another. He reſolves to be* A GREAT MAN; *and for that purpoſe breaks with his* KEEPER, *when he has got from her all ſhe had to give.*

ONE of the moſt ſpecious arguments alledged againſt the obligation to virtue, is the ſucceſs that is often obſerved to attend the violation of it, in the general purſuits of

the world. Of this you ſee the ſtrongeſt inſtance which this age has afforded, in that man, who ſits at the left hand of the *ſuperiour*, wrapped up in the conſciouſneſs of his own importance, and ſmiling contemptuouſly at the company around him, while they believe he is joining in their mirth.

A particular account of his life would lead into too great a length. It would ſeem a ſatire on mankind, rather than a detail of the actions of one man. However, as a ſhort ſketch of it may be of advantage, by unveiling this myſtery in the conduct of Heaven; and proving the inſufficiency of the higheſt proſperity to confer happineſs, even in the hour of attainment, when that proſperity is not founded in, and procured by virtue, I will juſt run over the great heads of his ſtory, with that brevity which the diſagreeableneſs of the ſubject naturally dictates.

The opening of his life gave no proſpect of his exalted ſtation. Pleaſure in every licentious exceſs ſoon diſſipated a ſmall patrimony; and he was hardly entered into man's eſtate, when want, of his own earning, began to ſtare him in the face.

The peculiar caſt of a man's mind is in nothing more ſtrongly ſhown, than in the expedients he has recourſe to, in order to extricate him from difficulties. Inſtead of quitting the

the vices which had brought him into this embarraſſment, he reſolved on the firſt alarm to build his hopes of fortune on them, by purſuing them in a different manner. Experienced in all the myſteries of intrigue, he knew that age and deformity will purchaſe pleaſures, for which youth and beauty expect to be flattered, if not even paid. Unreſtrained, therefore, by any ſcruples of honour or conſcience, he directly determined to fix upon ſome wealthy female of the former claſs, and never doubted making her paſſion repay him manifold what he had expended on the gratification of his own.

I ſee the abhorrence with which the mention of ſuch a ſcheme ſtrikes you. Venal proſtitution in the female ſex, though cut off from every other method of prolonging a wretched exiſtence, is the loweſt ſtate to which it can ſink. What then can be ſaid of a man, who, uncompelled by ſuch irreſiſtible neceſſity, voluntarily gives up the dignity of his nature, and hiring himſelf to be the ſlave of luſts which are a diſgrace to it, contentedly eats the bread of infamy and vice? Language yet wants a name for ſuch baſeneſs.

This hopeful ſcheme was no ſooner formed, than carried into execution. As his character gained him eaſy acceſs to all ſuch as were proper for his purpoſe, he immediately ſingled

out an old dowager, in whoſe diſpoſal the dotage of a dying huſband had left the accumulated wealth of ſeveral ages of ſucceſsful induſtry. Such a quarry engaged all his attention in the purſuit. He paid his addreſſes to her, though deſtitute of every thing that could raiſe natural deſire, with ſo much aſſiduity and warmth, that ſhe readily received him into her good graces; and, *in return for the pleaſure ſhe found in his converſation*, laviſhed her fortune upon him with a profuſion that even exceeded his hopes.

From the principle on which he ſet out, it may be judged that he did not neglect to improve ſuch an opportunity of repairing his broken fortunes, and laying up a fund for a future day, out of the overflowing of her untimely fondneſs. But, unbounded as her generoſity was, he was far from being content, while any thing further remained poſſible to be got from her. Beſide the great wealth which was directly in her power, a very large eſtate was by family-ſettlements to deſcend to an only daughter, whom ſhe had by her huſband. As ſoon, therefore, as her modeſt lover had got poſſeſſion of the former, his heart yearned for the latter alſo, with as much greedineſs, as if his wants were only encreaſed by his acquiſitions.

But, though he was ſeldom long at a loſs for means to accompliſh any thing he had in

view, as he was under no reſtraint from principle in the choice of them, there was an obſtacle in his way here, which all the fertility of his genius could not ſurmount. This was his connexion with the mother, the nature of which he well knew would never let her conſent to a ſcheme deſtructive of itſelf; for he had no fear of her making oppoſition from motives of honour or virtue to any thing that did not claſh with that, as he found none in his own conſcience even to this, though contrary to the firſt principles of nature.

Since he could not, therefore, get the daughter's whole fortune, by marrying her, he reſolved to exert his influence on her mother, to give her to ſome perſon of his chooſing, who ſhould divide it with him, as a recompenſe for making the match. For this purpoſe, he pitched upon a near relation of his own, who readily gave into his ſcheme, though poſſeſſed himſelf of a fortune that placed him above the neceſſity of ſtooping to ſuch meanneſs. The conſent of the guardian-mother, as he foreſaw, was eaſily obtained. She was happy in having ſuch an opportunity of proving her regard for him, as well as of removing her daughter out of his reach, his attention to whom, while his firſt project was in his head, had not eſcaped her jealous notice.

His ſhare of the prize, added to his other gains, made him now a man of conſiderable fortune, and fired him with an ambition of making a figure in the ſtate. To accompliſh this, the natural turn of his mind ſuggeſted it to him to marry into ſome family, the intereſt and ſplendour of which might drown the obſcurity of his own original, and aſſiſt his hopes. Nor did he apprehend any oppoſition to this ſcheme from the ſame quarter that had defeated the former. He had now gotten from her all that ſhe had to give; and the ſame principle which prompted him to be the hired drudge of her looſe deſires made him find no ſcruple to leave her ſervice, when ſhe was no longer able to pay the wages of it.

Nothing is eaſier than to make matter for diſpute. On her expreſſing her reſentment, with the haughtineſs which ſhe thought the circumſtances of the connexion between them gave her a right to aſſume, as ſhe had on many occaſions before, at ſomething he had done with deſign to provoke her, his *ſenſibility* took fire, and, in juſt indignation at treatment ſo improper for a *man of honour* to ſubmit to, he bound himſelf by the moſt dreadful imprecations to ſhake off ſo intolerable a yoke for ever, and ſo flung out of her preſence.

Her ſurpriſe at a behaviour ſo different from what he had ever ſhown before ſuſpended her

her reſentment, and ſhe waited with impatience for a repetition of the blandiſhments with which he had been accuſtomed to ſooth her anger. But, what was her aſtoniſhment to find, that, inſtead of making any advances of the kind, he had actually withdrawn himſelf from her houſe. This alarmed her. In the arrogance of her former ſuperiority, the loſs of which ſhe was not yet ſenſible of, ſhe ſent him a peremptory ſummons, to attend her directly. But her commands had now loſt their weight, and ſhe received a refuſal, the more cutting for being couched in cool, equivocal politeneſs. This drew on him an epiſtolary torrent of upbraidings, expoſtulations, and at laſt, of the moſt tender intreaties; but all were equally ineffectual. He pleaded his raſh vow, lamented the cruel obligation of it; and, as ſhe began to be ſoftened by this addreſs, hinted at a ſenſe of religion, and even diſtantly recommended it to her, as the beſt conſolation under the croſſes and afflictions of life.

Such ſentiments from him could mean nothing but ſneering inſult. In that light ſhe took them. However, as the nature of the affair made it improper for her to open her mind too explicitly, ſhe reſolved to play his own game back upon him, and affect to be convinced by arguments of which ſhe hoped to take advantage at a proper time, though in a manner very different from his intention, in applying them.

CHAP. II.

Continued. He begins his ſcheme ſucceſsfully, by ſtealing a marriage. His late KEEPER *makes an artful demand of all the preſents ſhe had given him, which he anſwers as artfully. He advances in his ſcheme by ſteps exactly in his character, and gets into favour with a great perſon.* CHRYSAL *makes ſome remarks on the origin of the affections of the human mind, and the different manner of breeding men and horſes, with the conſequence.*

WHILE ſhe was pleaſing herſelf with this thought, he had carried the moſt difficult part of his ſcheme into execution. The paſſion for play, which marks the character of the preſent age, though it really counteracts every ſocial virtue, is yet the means of aſſociating all kinds and ranks of people, who have or even appear to have money to play for. At meetings for this purpoſe, he had found means to make an acquaintance with a nobleman, who was ſo pleaſed with his converſation, ſtudied deſignedly to pleaſe him, that he admitted him to an intimacy in his family, which he knew ſo well how to improve with one of his daughters, that, in deſpight of the diſparity of age and rank, he ſoon prevailed upon her to crown

crown his hopes by a private marriage, as the conſent of her family could not be expected.

As the immediate fortune of the lady could not be thought an object of mercenary purſuit, when the firſt emotions of reſentment gave place to reflexion, his plea of paſſion was admitted as an excuſe for this violation of the ſacred laws of hoſpitality; and his wife's father unknowingly completed his deſign, by exerting all his intereſt, which was very great, to advance him in the ſtate.

The ſecreſy with which it had been neceſſary for him to conduct this affair, and the rapidity of his ſucceſs, prevented his late miſtreſs from making any attempt to defeat it. As ſoon, however, as ſhe recovered from the firſt ſtroke of her aſtoniſhment at the news of his marriage, ſhe proceeded to put her ſcheme in execution. Accordingly, ſhe ſent him compliments of congratulation on this happy fruit of his converſion, exhorting him to perſevere in it; and profeſſed her reſolution to imitate his example, and dedicate the remainder of her days to the duties of virtue and religion, as a proof of which ſhe propoſed to begin by reſtoring to her injured daughter as much as poſſible of the fortune, which the confidence of her huſband had left in her power, and ſhe had unhappily laviſhed in purſuits, to the criminal nature of which he had opened her eyes.

As all that was not diſſipated beyond recovery was what ſhe had given to him, and her reſtoring it, therefore, muſt depend on his making a reſtitution to her firſt, he was not a moment at a loſs for the drift of this extraordinary inſtance of penitence, nor how to treat the account of it. He immediately returned her an anſwer, congratulating her in his turn, with ſincerity equal to her own, on her pious reſolutions, the intention of which, he ſaid, would make amends for the impoſſibility of carrying them into execution, any farther than by ſtinting herſelf to the indiſpenſible neceſſaries of life, and laying up the reſt of her large income to ſupply the place of the ſums ſhe had expended.

Such an anſwer neceſſarily drew on an explanation, and of courſe a demand of the ſeveral preſents ſhe had made him in the courſe of their dalliance, and knew he had laid up, as he lived at her expenſe all the time. This was no more than he expected. He replied, therefore, without being in the leaſt diſconcerted, that he looked upon every thing he had received from her not as preſents, but payment for the time he had devoted to attending upon her; and for that reaſon thought it inconſiſtent with that regard for juſtice which is inſeparable from true piety, for her to demand ſuch a reſtitution, eſpecially as ſhe muſt be ſenſible that

he

he could not now make it, without doing wrong to his wife, who had an undoubted property in every thing that belonged to him; and concluded with deſiring that a correſpondence which might be miſunderſtood, and ſo diſturb his connubial happineſs, might be dropped between them.

This ſufficiently explained the motives of his conduct; and the deſpicable ſituation which ſhe had brought herſelf to. However, ſhe was obliged to acquieſce with the beſt grace ſhe could, without even the poor ſatisfaction of revenge; for he had taken care to inſert in every paragraph of his letters ſuch anecdotes of the connexion that had been between them, that it was impoſſible for her to ſhow them, in order to expoſe him, without expoſing herſelf at the ſame time to the contempt and deteſtation of the world. From this time, therefore, all intercourſe beyond that of common civility was broken off between them; though ſome conſequences of their former connexion, which happened even after her death, make one of the moſt ſtriking parts of his ſtory, as ſhall be obſerved in the proper place.

The firſt eſſays of a man's diſpoſition indicate the rule by which his whole life will be conducted. The intereſt of the family into which he had thus ſtolen had no ſooner raiſed him to ſome degree of power, than he aſpired to the

higheſt, to attain which he reſolved to purſue a method exactly in his character. This was to ingratiate himſelf, he regarded not by what means, with one of the firſt perſonages in the ſtate, whoſe intereſt he meant to make uſe of, as long as it could ſerve him, and then fly in his face, to ſhow his independence. Nature had never endowed a man with qualifications fitter for ſuch a purpoſe. He was every thing, to every man. The gay were ſtruck with his wit; the grave with his ſolidity; while an appearance of candour and ſincerity, that lulled ſuſpicion to ſleep, won the confidence of all with whom he converſed; all which powers of pleaſing were, by a ſervility of diſpoſition derived perhaps from a ſervile birth, proſtituted to the humour of thoſe whom he deſired to pleaſe, however contrary to his own.

I ſee your curioſity at my ſaying, that *the ſervility of his diſpoſition might perhaps be derived from a ſervile birth.* You want to have the origin of the affections of the human ſoul explained, whether they are imprinted on it, at its firſt emanation, from the ſource of all exiſtence, or received by traduction from the immediate parents of the body, or only cauſed by the caſual operation of external objects. But this, as I have ſaid in other caſes, is a difficulty that I am not at liberty to ſolve, as the queſtion is not yet determined by the learned; though much

much ingenious reaſoning has been diſplayed on every ſide of it. This only I ſhall ſay, that the practice of mankind ſeems to contradict the ſecond of theſe opinions, who ſhow no regard to the diſpoſitions of thoſe on whom they propagate their own ſpecies, though they trace back the pedigree of a dog, or an horſe, for many generations, for fear of any fault in the breed; the reaſon, you may perhaps imagine, why the *brutes bred with ſuch care are found ſo much ſeldomer to degenerate than the offspring of the greateſt men.*

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Continued. He practiſes a ſucceſsful method for gaining the confidence of his new Patron, which he turns to good account. Hiſtory of the lover who ſucceeded him in the good graces of his late KEEPER. *He ſtrives to prevent his taking advantage of his influence over her; and finding he fails in that, fools him into diſtreſs, which brings his life in his power. He ſlights many motives, which might have had weight with others, and takes advantage of the opportunity to get rid of him, and all further trouble about him. He continues to dupe him till the laſt moment, when his eyes are opened, and all comes out.*

AS ſoon as he had inſinuated himſelf into the pleaſurable liking of his deſigned Patron, by an unwearied exertion of all his powers of pleaſing, he directly proceeded, with the niceſt art, to improve that liking into an important confidence. He watched his every action, word, and look, till he diſcovered the peculiar turn of his mind, to which he accommodated his own ſo implicitly, that the very faculties of his ſoul ſeemed to move only by the other's will.

They who are above deceit themſelves ſuſpect it not in others. That ſelf-love, which is inſeparable

inſeparable from humanity, was eaſily impoſed upon by ſuch art. His Patron liked himſelf in him; and inſenſibly came to think all reſerve unneceſſary with one, whoſe ſoul appeared to be only the ſhadow of his own. This ſoon gave him real conſequence, as the numbers whom intereſt or inclination attached to his patron found it neceſſary to take the lead from him; and enabled him to graſp at every opportunity of engroſſing power, and acquiring wealth, to ſupply thoſe pleaſures which he had quitted only from neceſſity, and returned to again the moment he had the means of obtaining them.

But all this torrent of ſucceſs was not able to divert his attention for a moment from the ſmalleſt matter in which his avarice was concerned, as he gave the ſtrongeſt proof in the following affair; to explain which I muſt look back to the woman, whoſe laviſh fondneſs firſt raiſed his fortune, as it happened in conſequence of his connexion with her, though ſome conſiderable time after her death.

It is obſerved that habitual indulgence continues the paſſions proper to youth after the fire that firſt ſupplied them is exhauſted, and the end for which they were implanted by nature become impoſſible.

Old as this woman was when our hero deſerted her, and to appearance as incapable of feeling, as raiſing, deſire, ſhe had ſo long accuſtomed

cuſtomed herſelf to the gratification of every ſenſual appetite, that ſhe could not bear to live without a lover. The difficulty was, how to fix upon a proper object: for as intereſt was her only attraction, the firſt advances muſt neceſſarily come from her; and then her prodigality to her laſt had put it out of her power to make it worth the while of ſuch another as ſhe might like to ſupply his place. Precluded thus from much delicacy in her choice, neceſſity directed her to one of her own domeſticks, ſomething in whoſe circumſtances pointed him out more particularly to her notice.

There is not a more deſpicable inſtance of vanity, than being aſhamed of the connexions of nature, becauſe of poverty, when that poverty is not the effect of vice. A far diſtant female relation had from this vanity bequeathed to her a very conſiderable fortune, to which this man ſhould have been heir, had not the lowneſs of his condition, a motive ſufficient to have influenced a generous heart in his favour, made her think it would be a diſgrace to her to be ſucceeded by him; for which reaſon ſhe wantonly deprived him of the inheritance of his anceſtors, to give it to one who did not want it. Diſpirited by ſuch unnatural injuſtice, for which the law afforded no redreſs, he was no longer able to purſue the induſtry that had hitherto been his ſupport; and ſunk into ſuch diſtreſs,

diſtreſs, that his deſpair made him at length throw himſelf at the feet of her who enjoyed his ſpoils, to beg relief.

This happened critically at the time when her inclinations for a new lover began to get the better of her grief for the loſs of the laſt. Softened by what ſhe had herſelf ſo lately felt, ſhe pitied his diſtreſs; and as all the tenderer paſſions are allied, that pity was ſoon warmed into ſuch love as ſhe was capable of feeling. Accordingly, as ſhe had taken him into her family on his firſt application, ſhe now entruſted him with the management of her affairs, to give colour for the further intimacy ſhe had in view. The conſequence was natural. He readily took hints too plain to be over-looked; and ſhe kept up *his aſſiduity in her ſervice*, by ſome preſents in hand, and grants of more, charged moſt of them, indeed, on the inheritance of his anceſtors, which ſhe had ſettled upon his predeceſſor in her favour after her death, till when they were not to take place or be diſcovered, to avoid his reproaches, as well as thoſe of her daughter and her huſband for ſuch a repetition of her former follies; and becauſe ſhe did not chooſe to ſtraiten her own circumſtances, by the immediate payment of them. But theſe wages of vice, however welcome in his preſent indigence, proved fatal to him in the end.

The

The hero of my tale, who ſaw the riſe of this new favourite, and knew from experience on what it muſt be founded, though ſhe affected to attribute her notice of him to gratitude to his relations, and retributory juſtice to himſelf, gave him a genteel and profitable employment under one of the many which he himſelf enjoyed in the ſtate, profeſſedly in compliment to her, but really to attach him to his own intereſt, and prevent his exerting his influence on her to obtain ſuch grants as before-mentioned; for the turn of his own mind made him ſuſpect every thing that was poſſible; and ſuch is the partiality of man to himſelf, that he who has been ungrateful to all mankind will yet expect gratitude from others.

Proud of this preferment, which raiſed his rank in life, and depending on the profeſſions of friendſhip and promiſes which his new friend liberally made him, he thought proper at her death not only not to claim her grants for the preſent, to avoid breaking with him, as he knew muſt be the conſequence, but alſo to give up to him a particular gift, part of his own alienated inheritance, which he had received publickly from her, *as a reward for his ſervices*, and truſt to his honour for an equivalent return. But that return, when at length it was made, was as far from being equivalent as his promiſes were from performance, nothing being more

more contrary to his intentions, than to enable him to ſupport his claims to thoſe grants of which he had gotten notice, and judged from his own heart the reaſon of their being concealed. He continued, therefore, to feed him with promiſes, which led his vanity into expenſe, and encouraged him to embark in ſchemes that he had not a fund to execute, till he fell into diſtreſſes, to extricate himſelf from which he had recourſe to means that laid his life at the mercy of this his ſuppoſed friend.

There are ſome crimes, the conſequences of which are ſo dangerous, that no puniſhment can be too ſevere to deter from them. One of the worſt of theſe is imitating a man's *ſignature*, with a deſign to deceive. It perpetuates the violation of truth, undermines the ſecurity of innocence, and breaks that confidence which is indiſpenſibly neceſſary to carry on the concerns of life. But, though no circumſtance can, in a legal ſenſe, extenuate the heinouſneſs of this crime, there were ſome in this particular inſtance which would have deterred any other man from the proſecution of it: it had been committed not with an intention of doing injuſtice to him, or any other, but to remedy for a time his injuſtice, by raiſing apparently the value of the return he had made for the gift of their common benefactreſs, as I have before obſerved, nearer to an equality with it, in order

order to procure preſent relief from diſtreſs, of which he had been, in ſo many ſenſes, the cauſe.

But all theſe conſiderations were of no weight with him, when put in competition with the conveniency of getting rid of one whom he doubly hated, for being privy to his iniquities, and interfering with his intereſt. He heſitated not a moment, therefore, to make uſe of an opportunity offered beyond his hopes, and ſacrifice him, under the ſpecious appearance of paying obedience to the laws.

In this it was neceſſary for him to act with the deepeſt diſſimulation, to accompliſh his deſign in its full extent. But this was no difficulty to him. He profeſſed pity for his misfortunes; and, while he corrupted all in whom the wretch placed confidence to betray him, managed ſo as to ſeem to be compelled by law to appear againſt him, though he might with the greateſt eaſe have avoided it, and buried the whole in ſilence. Nor did he ſtop here! his malice ſeemed to purſue him even beyond the grave; for inſtead of permitting him to prepare in peace for the approach of fate, he buoyed him up with the hopes of a pardon, to earn which the deluded victim ſubſcribed to every thing dictated to him to blacken his own character, and make void the grants which he had purchaſed at ſo dear a rate; and in this infatuation

tuation he was kept to the laſt moment, to prevent his recanting; for which purpoſe, his neareſt friends, and all who might have undeceived him, and adminiſtered comfort to his diſtreſs in the hour of anguiſh, were barred admittance to him.

But his eyes were opened on the verge of life, and in that aweful moment when truth only is ſpoken, he revoked every thing he had been thus drawn in to ſay, and aſſerted the validity of the claims which were the cauſe of his ruin, ſo that the whole ſcheme, laboured with ſuch deep damnation to deceive the world, was defeated.

I ſee the horrour with which you are affected at ſuch a ſcene; and ſhall therefore cloſe it with obſerving, that though he was permitted to perpetrate his crimes, divine juſtice prevented his reaping the fruits he propoſed from them; as, beſide the immediate price of his blood, it coſt him more than he earned by this complicated guilt, to ſtop the cries of the widow and orphan, and bribe venal defamation to ſilence, when it was too late, and the myſtery of his wickedneſs was made known to the world.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Continued. A view of his political character introduces a maxim not sufficiently attended to. He fails in a great stroke, and makes so many wrong ones, that he is kicked out of power, and forced to be content with profit, which he pursues through thick and thin. An unhappy event gives him an opportunity of shewing his ingratitude to his late Patron, on the merit of which he rises to higher power than ever, which he wisely exerts behind the curtain, and leaves HIS TOOLS *to bear the blame. An account of the just fruits of so much success concludes his history.*

YOU have hitherto seen him only in private life. I will now give you a glimpse of his political character, which will convince you of a truth, for obvious reasons not sufficiently attended to, which is, that the ruling principles of the heart influence the actions in all capacities; and therefore that *it is impossible for a bad man to be a good minister.*

The power to which the confidence of his Patron raised him was such as might have enabled him to effect either much good, or evil, had he known how to have used it to the best advantage.

advantage. But his eagerneſs in the purſuit of his own views put him off his uſual guard, and diſcovered his principles before it was too late to oppoſe them.

The moſt exalted minds are not exempted from human weakneſſes. That of his Patron was a thirſt of power, though without a thought of uſing it in any improper manner. Some late ſervices, of the higheſt importance, which he had performed to the ſtate, ſuggeſted to our hero a ſcheme for rivetting his intereſt with him ſtill ſtronger, by procuring him a power which he knew would centre really in himſelf. Accordingly, he exerted all his abilities and influence to wreſt from the Sovereign an eſſential part of the incommunicable power of the crown, and veſt it in him.

Such an attempt inſtantly gave the alarm to every real friend, not only of the government, but alſo of him in whoſe favour it was profeſſed to be made; who, though they harboured no fear of him, did not dare to offer ſuch an affront to their Sovereign, and give a wound to the political conſtitution of their country which might be of moſt dangerous conſequence in leſs ſafe hands. The deſign therefore was defeated; and, inſtead of ſerving his Patron, only inſtilled doubts of him into thoſe who were not acquainted with the uprightneſs of his heart.

Though the intereſt of his Patron continued to

to ſupport him for a conſiderable time after this, his whole conduct was ſuch a ſeries of blunders (many of them ſo groſs, that it was doing violence to probability to impute them to ignorance) that at length *the voice of the people was raiſed againſt him*, and he was obliged to give up all pretenſions to power, and ſit down with an employment of great, but mere profit, which all his own ſollicitations, though urged with the abject importunity of a common beggar, even to ſhedding tears, and imploring compaſſion for his wife and family, all he had hitherto acquired having been ſquandered, as faſt as it came, on his pleaſures, would not have procured for him, had not his Patron ſanguinely eſpouſed his intereſt, even to the injury of his own, though on a diſcovery of his principles and private character, now too notorious to be concealed, he rejected him from his eſteem, and refuſed to give any further countenance to his ambition.

From this time he applied every power of his ſoul to amaſs wealth, which he had too many opportunities of doing in his preſent employment, the moſt iniquitous of which he never failed to improve to ſtill greater iniquity, regardleſs of publick reproach, and the diſtreſs of myriads, ſuffering under his injuſtice, whoſe cries and imprecations aſcended hourly to heaven againſt him.

Riches give conſequence, eſpecially with thoſe who ſacrifice every thing to luxury. Though

Though he had no publick power, his perſonal influence over individuals in a ſhort time became greater than ever, as he too ſoon had an opportunity of proving.

One of thoſe events, which ſhow the vanity of all human deſigns, however wiſely conducted, and glorious in their end, threw the government into other hands. New men always adopt new meaſures, if only from an affectation of appearing wiſer than their predeceſſors. In this change his late Patron loſt all influence, except that which *virtue eſtabliſhes in the hearts of the virtuous.* This was an opportunity for ſhaking off the weight of obligation not to be miſſed by one of our Hero's turn. He not only deſerted him directly in the baſeſt manner, but alſo, to ingratiate himſelf with the preſent powers, fathered upon him the fictions of his own brain, under the appearance of betraying his ſecrets, and made a merit of aggravating his ingratitude and perfidy by open inſults, in hope of provoking him to ſome unguarded act or expreſſion of reſentment, which might give advantage againſt him, *by the common trick of applying to the maſter what is meant to the ſervant.* But for once all his art failed. Confident in conſcious innocence and merit, he diſdained to give weight to ſuch baſe machinations by taking notice of them; and receiving this ingratitude as a puniſhment for having placed his

eſteem ſo unworthily, looked down upon him with indignant contempt, nor was ever heard to honour his name with utterance.

Such a proof of his ſincerity gained our Hero the confidence of his new friends, to whoſe tottering power his perſonal intereſt was found a neceſſary ſupport. But he lent not that ſupport but on his own terms. Cooled by experience, he had learned that the name of power is always purſued by envy and ambition. He, therefore, wiſely gratified the vanity of others with the dangerous ſhadow, while he reſerved the ſubſtance to himſelf, dictating in ſafety, becauſe in ſecret, all the meaſures, for any miſtake in which they were anſwerable.

In this ſituation you ſee him now. But ſuch a ſeries of ſucceſs has been far from procuring him the happineſs propoſed in the purſuit. Recollection of the means imbitters the end. The ingratitude and perfidy of one, whom he had placed his whole confidence in, and bound to him by the higheſt obligations, upbraid him continually with his own baſeneſs to his Patron, and make him afraid to place truſt in any other; ſo that he lives in a ſtate of conſtant ſuſpicion and dread of all mankind, deſtitute of that friendly confidence which is the cement of ſociety, the comfort and ſupport of life.

Nor is this the only wound that rankles in his breaſt! The unhappy victim of his avarice, mur-

murthered under the formalities of law, is never abſent from his thoughts a moment. Conjured up by conſcience, his ſpectre haunts his dreams. He *ſees* him *in the dark*. He *hears* him *in the deepeſt ſilence*. Nor can the loud laugh of mirth and riot drown his louder voice in the midſt of company. Hence that gloom which you ſee hang upon his brow; that conſciouſneſs of guilt, which gives a caſt of horrour to his very ſmiles.

Conſider now, the ſtory of this man; and own with reverence and awe, that *vice never wants an avenger*; that *wickedneſs is its own puniſhment*. Who would not rather be the apparent wretch, that wanders homeleſs through the world, fed by the cold hand of common charity, than he, with all his honours, power, and wealth!

The characters of the reſt, except him who had been my maſter's competitor for admiſſion into the ſuperior order of the ſociety, are not diſtinguiſhed by any thing to make them worth diſplaying! I ſhall, therefore, leave them in the obſcurity they deſerve; as I ſhall reſerve his for another place, where ſome new occurrences will ſhow it in a ſtronger light.

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL *leaves the convent. His maſter proceeds in character. He practiſes a new manner of courtſhip; and ſignaliſes his talents for intrigue, by debauching the daughter of his friend. Her diſtreſs, when too late, gives him ſome ſlight qualms of conſcience; but he ſoon recovers, and goes on in his enterpriſe.*

IT was my fortune to leave this place, in the poſſeſſion of the ſame perſon who had brought me to it. The moment the meeting broke up, he flew to reduce into practice ſome part of the theory which had been ſo well diſcuſſed among them. A perſon of diſtinguiſhed learning and virtue, who had taken great pains, though to little purpoſe, with ſome part of the education of his youth, had obſerved of late, that he ſeemed to pay him particular reſpect, and was more frequent than uſual in his viſits at his houſe, where he behaved with a moral decency, very different from his general character.

The good man ſaw this with real pleaſure, and attributing it to the influence of his own converſation, as vanity will find its way into the beſt hearts, gave him all the encouragement he could to come, in hopes of working a thorough reformation in him. But he was deceived

ceived in that hope; and found, when too late, that he had cheriſhed a viper in his boſom, to ſting his heart.

Euſebius (that was this perſon's name) had an only daughter, on whoſe education he had exerted the tendereſt care. She was now in that dangerous time of life, when ripened youth has given all the paſſions their full force, and reaſon not yet acquired ſtrength to rule them. This danger, though, ſeemed leſs threatening to her than it is to moſt of the ſex, nature, which had been moſt liberal to her mind, having denied thoſe charms of face which too often prove a ſnare to the poſſeſſor; and the precepts of her father trained her in ſuch principles of wiſdom and virtue, as ſeemed a ſufficient guard.

Such circumſtances, excluſive of the obligations of honour not to infringe the laws of hoſpitality (I add not virtue, for that has long loſt all obligation in matters of this kind) would have prevented any other man from thinking of attempting her; but the pleaſure of ſeducing innocence ſupplied every defect of beauty; and the difficulty of ſuch a conqueſt doubled his ardour in the purſuit; as the triumph would eſtabliſh the fame of his gallantry, which had never yet aſpired beyond a ſervant wench; beſide, that the age and profeſſion of her father ſecured him from the danger of perſonal reſentment. Encouraged by all theſe equally power-

ful motives, the moment he ſaw her, he marked her out for the proof of his talents for intrigue; how to begin his attack though, ſo as to elude her father's vigilance, without alarming her virtue, was the queſtion.

But he was not long at a loſs. Difficulties, which appear unſurmountable to wiſdom, are eaſily conquered by cunning (and with this he was plentifully ſtored) becauſe it will make uſe of means, which the other holds in abhorrence. In purſuance, therefore, of a plan, which he ſoon formed, he cultivated the acquaintance of *Euſebius* with the greateſt aſſiduity, and, in all his viſits to his houſe, turned his converſation entirely upon points of ſpeculative knowledge, in which he profeſſed the moſt earneſt deſire of information. *Euſebius* took the bait. As theſe were the uſual topicks of diſcourſe between him and his daughter, he was pleaſed at her being preſent whenever my maſter was with him, both for her information, and to give her an opportunity of diſplaying the advantages ſhe had received from his care; for which purpoſe, he often led her and my maſter into arguments, to which he liſtened with the higheſt delight, as ſhe always had the better in them. Nor was ſhe leſs pleaſed on ſuch occaſions than her father. The modeſt deference which my maſter conſtantly paid to her judgement was ſo flattering to her conſciouſneſs of ſuperiority,

that

that ſhe ſoon became fond of his company; at the ſame time, that the artfulneſs of his addreſs to her, for he never ſhowed any other notice of her ſex, than by a moſt guarded delicacy in his expreſſions, deceived the watchful care of *Euſebius* ſo effectually, that he never ſcrupled to leave his two pupils (as he fondly affected to call them) alone together, when any buſineſs demanded his attendance elſewhere.

As this was what my maſter had all along aimed at, it may be ſuppoſed he did not neglect to improve opportunities ſo favourable to his wiſhes. He always turned his converſation directly to ſuch ſubjects as were moſt likely to inflame the paſſions, on the gratification of which he expatiated with a particular warmth and luxuriancy of imagination, but in terms ſo well wrapped up, as to conceal the poiſon they conveyed. The effect ſoon anſwered his deſign. Subjects, propoſed merely as points of ſpeculation, gave her no alarm. And when ſuch thoughts are once ſuggeſted, nature will lead them to her own ends. Her paſſions had been ſmothered, not extinguiſhed; and were the readier to take fire, for ſuch reſtraint. She heard him, therefore, with pleaſure, and ſlid inſenſibly into danger, the direct mention of which would have ſtruck her with horrour.

Matters were in this critical ſituation, when he returned from *the ſociety*. The moment he

alighted, he flew to the houſe of *Euſebius*, who unhappily was not at home. The converſation ſoon fell into its late courſe. There are ſome moments in which nature will bear down all oppoſition. Though ſhe had indulged herſelf in talking on ſuch ſubjects, ſhe meant nothing more. But he was too well verſed in the practice to let her ſtop at the theory; and one unguarded minute murthered the peace of her future life, and blaſted the fruits of all her father's care.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe what ſhe felt, when paſſion gave place to reaſon, and ſhe became ſenſible of what had paſſed. Even he, hacknied as he was in the ways of wickedneſs, could not ſtand it. He left her precipitately, and for the firſt time felt ſomething like remorſe. But theſe qualms laſted not long. His deſires were rather raiſed than ſatisfied; beſides, that to have ſtopped here, without making his ſucceſs publick, would have diſappointed perhaps the principal pleaſure he had in view. He reſolved, therefore, to ſeduce her from her father's houſe, that all the world might be witneſſes of his triumph.

For this purpoſe he went to her the next morning, at a time when he knew *Euſebius* was uſually engaged abroad. On enquiring for her, he was anſwered that ſhe was not well; and was turning about to go away, when her maid, who, from her own experience had ſuſpected ſomething of the cauſe of her miſtreſs's illneſs, officiouſly ran to him, and told him ſhe was in her dreſſing-room.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Continued. CHRYSAL's *maſter makes his triumph publick, by ſeducing his new miſtreſs away from her father's houſe. The manner in which he impoſed upon them both to effect this; with the conſolation he gave her for ſome natural conſequences of his gallantry. His triumph is completed by her going upon the town, and her father's breaking his heart.*

HIS intimacy in the family giving him a title to viſit her there, he went directly up, where he found her in a condition that once more ſhook his reſolution, and made him almoſt ſorry for what he had done. She ſat the image of deſpair! ſleep had never cloſed her eyes! ſhe had not changed the diſordered dreſs of the day before; and her face was ſo ſwollen with inceſſant weeping, that he could hardly believe it was ſhe.

Her maid withdrawing *conveniently*, as ſoon as he entered, he threw himſelf at her feet in all the trick of woe, and imploring her pardon, lamented what had paſſed (for which he imprecated Heaven's vengeance on his own head) in ſuch paſſionate terms, as, amid all her grief, alarmed her fear of his being overheard, for hitherto the ſecret was their own.

The firſt hint of this cured him of his penitence, and ſuggeſted to him how to proceed. He perſiſted in all the extravagance of grief; and acted his part ſo well, that, forgetting her own diſtreſs for a moment, ſhe was inſenſibly led to adminiſter conſolation to him. This was what he wanted! he at length ſeemed to be comforted by her arguments, which he gradually improved ſo far as to glance at her continuance of the guilty commerce, which he preſſed for by the moſt rapturous profeſſions of love, and the ſtrongeſt vows of an unalterable conſtancy and truth.

This was an attack which ſhe was no way prepared for! her heart was ſoftened by grief; and ſhame for what was paſſed precluded her arguments againſt a repetition. She heſitated however, ſilenced not convinced, till the voice of her father turned the ſcale. "O! ſave me "from his ſight!" (exclaimed ſhe, wringing her hands.) "Save me from his ſight! I'll go to "death, to any thing rather than meet his "eye."——

"Nor ſhall you meet it." (Anſwered my maſter claſping her in his arms, and kiſſing away the tears that trickled down her cheek.) "I'll go "this inſtant; and take him home with me as "upon buſineſs, where I'll find means to "detain him, while you pack up ſome imme-"diate neceſſaries, and prepare to meet my

faithful

" *faithful valet de chambre*, who ſhall wait with " a coach at the end of the next ſtreet, and " conduct you to my country-houſe, whither " I'll follow you on the wings of love, and " drown every diſagreeable thought in rap- " ture."

He did not give her time to anſwer, but ruſhed directly out of the room, and meeting her *ready* maid at the door, took his cue from her, who told him ſhe had excuſed her miſtreſs's abſence from ſupper the night before, on a pretence of her being engaged in reading, as ſhe ſaid in the morning, that ſhe had ſat up ſo late, ſhe could not riſe to breakfaſt.

Satisfied with theſe excuſes, becauſe he ſuſpected nothing elſe, *Euſebius*, on hearing my maſter was above, was coming up to pay his compliments to him, when he met him at the bottom of the ſtairs. " I muſt give up arguing " with one," (ſaid my maſter ſmiling as he went forward into the parlour, whither he knew *Euſebius* would neceſſarily attend him) " who ſits up ſtudying all night. She has turn- " ed me out on a pretence of dreſſing; but I " know it is to go back to the book at which I " caught her; ſo that I ſhall make but a poor " figure in the evening if you don't help me out. " However, I'll try! I am not aſhamed to " yield to her! But, come! I called ſo early " to beg your company at my houſe, where I

" have ſomething that will pleaſe you to con-
" ſult you upon. I ſhan't keep you long, as
" I am obliged to go out before dinner."

To this *Euſebius* readily aſſented; and my maſter, putting his hand under his arm, led him away, proud of ſuch familiarity with a perſon of his rank, as unſuſpecting as a victim to the altar. As ſoon as he got home, he gave the neceſſary inſtructions to his *truſty valet de chambre*, and then returning to *Euſebius*, amuſed him with imaginary ſchemes of reformation and œconomy in his family, and improvements in his houſe, till the return of his emiſſary let him know all was over. He then diſmiſſed *Euſebius* with a ſmile of triumph, who went home, happy in his mind at the prudence and virtue of his converſation, the effects, as he fondly imagined, of his own care and example; the laſt time his mind ever knew happineſs.

The moment he was gone, my maſter haſted after the deluded fugitive, whom he overtook juſt as ſhe alighted at his houſe, the ſervants of which were too well accuſtomed to ſuch things, to be ſurpriſed at the ſight of a new face. The manner of their meeting may be eaſily conceived. On his ſide, all was joy and triumph; on her's, guilty confuſion, ſhame, and fear. However, repetition, though the higheſt aggravation of a crime, is yet leſs terrifying than the firſt commiſſion; beſides, ſhe had now gone too far to ſtop at any thing.

Three

Three days he ſtaid with her, every moment of which was imbittered to her by reflexion, and ſeemed tedious to him from ſatiety and impatience to make his triumph known; and then left her on a pretence of buſineſs, with vows of immediate return, and, going back to *London*, repaired directly to the tavern, where he had by letter appointed to meet all his aſſociates, to whom he related the whole affair in ſuch terms of exultation, as raiſed their envy, not ſo much at his poſſeſſion of her, as the glory of ſuch a triumph.

I ſee your anxiety to know the fate of the unhappy *Euſebius*, and his more unhappy daughter. Though I ſaw them no more myſelf, I had too many opportunities of hearing their ſtory, the ſum of which is this:—*Euſebius*, on his return home from my maſter, found a note from his daughter, bidding him farewell for ever, and deſiring he would not take the trouble of making any enquiry after her, as ſhe was unworthy of his care. The diſtraction evident in the ſtyle and purport of this note too plainly ſhowed her ruin. This was an attack his heart was not proof againſt. He ſunk down inſtantly in a ſwoon, in which he eſcaped ſome hours of miſery before he recovered his ſenſes.

The firſt exertion of his reaſon was to make enquiry after his daughter, but no one could give him any information, her maid who conducted

ducted having accompanied her flight. He then flew to his friend, my master, for council and assistance; for the goodness of his own heart would neither let him suspect him, nor desert her in the ruin into which she had fallen; but he was told at his house, that a certain Nobleman of his acquaintance had called upon him, the moment he left him, and taken him into the country for a few days. Every enquiry he could make after his daughter was equally unsuccessful, till my master's exultation made the whole affair publick. This, if possible, gave fresh poignancy to his grief. He did not, however, desert the wretched victim of such villainy, but wrote to her directly to return to him, and hide her shame from the world in his bosom; but despair made her reject his offer.

As for her, a few days, in which my master left her to the comfort of her own reflexions, discovered to her that his love had been injurious to her health, as well as to her peace of mind. What she felt at this discovery may easily be conceived. She wrote to him in the agony of her soul, to reproach such manifold baseness; but, instead of an answer of excuse or consolation, received only a quack doctor's advertisement, and a bank-note for a trifling sum, enclosed in a blank cover. The same post brought her father's offer of forgiveness and reception. The contrast was more than she could

could bear. She hurried back to town, where deſpair prompting her to revenge her folly on herſelf by ſtill deeper ruin, ſhe plunged into all the horrours of a life of common proſtitution.

This filled the meaſure of her father's woe. He had no redreſs to expect in this world; and, therefore, reſigning the puniſhment of his wrongs to the great Avenger, indulged his grief in ſilence, till in a few months it brought his grey hairs to the grave.

CHAP. VII.

" CHRYSAL's *maſter pays his court to a great per-*
" *ſon, who ſeems not much to reliſh his humour,*
" *and expreſſes ſome unfaſhionable ſentiments con-*
" *cerning polite pleaſures. In the courſe of a*
" *regular progreſſion* CHRYSAL *comes into the*
" *poſſeſſion of a Beau.*" *Hiſtory of a Beau, with a journal of his manner of life for one day.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, in a common way, for that of* A LADY OF FASHION.

" THE next morning after my maſter's
" return to *London*, he went to pay his
" court to the Heir of the Crown, who was
" then at one of his country ſeats. Some
" publick occaſion had brought a concourſe
" more than uſual in thoſe retirements, to pay
" their duty to the Prince, that morning. As
" my maſter was one of the laſt who came, as
" ſoon as his devoirs were ended, ſome of the
" company accidentally aſked him what had
" kept him ſo late; on which, with an eaſy
" air of pleaſantry, he anſwered aloud, that he
" had been detained by a very whimſical affair:
" A certain nobleman (ſaid he) went into
" company laſt night ſo *immenſely* drunk, that
" having ſat down to play, and loſt five thou-
" ſand pounds, he quite forgot it this morn-
" ing,

" ing, and refuſed to pay the money, till ſome " *perſon of honour*, who was unconcerned in the " matter, ſhould vouch his having loſt it fairly; " on which it was referred to me, and ſorry I " am that I was qualified to give it againſt " him."

" How, my Lord! by being a perſon of ho- " nour!" (ſays the gentleman he ſpoke to.)—

" No! (replied my maſter, with a ſignificant " ſmile) not ſo neither! but by being uncon- " cerned in winning it."—And then turning ſhort to another, " But, have you heard the " news, my Lord? (ſaid he.) Mr. —— caught " his wife yeſterday, taking a ſerious walk in " *Kenſington* Gardens, with the gentleman whom " we all know he forbade her keeping company " with ſome time ago."—

" A ſmile of general approbation encouraged " him ſo much, that he concluded with ſaying, " he wiſhed he had himſelf been the happy de- " linquent ſo taken, as he doubted not but the " graveſt biſhop on the bench would, were he " to ſpeak his mind honeſtly."

" The Prince had heard him without interrup- " tion; but, as ſoon as he had ended, turning to " a nobleman who ſtood near him, There can " be no greater inſult (ſaid he, with a deter- " mined look, and ſolemn accent) to a perſon, " who is appointed to put the laws of a country " in execution, than for any one to boaſt of

" a breach

" a breach of thoſe laws in his preſence. *For* " *my part, if I am ever called by Providence to* " *that ſtation, it is my invariable reſolution, that* " *no man, how exalted ſoever in rank, who lives in* " *open violation of any law, human or divine, ſhall* " *ever hold employment under me, or receive coun-* " *tenance from me.*"

" This rebuke damped my maſter's ſpirits, " as it ſtruck a reverential awe into all preſent. " He hung down his head; and in a few mi- " nutes withdrew quite abaſhed. But he ſoon " recovered; and, to ſilence the jeſts of his " companions, and ſhow that he was not to be " brow-beaten out of his own way, he made " one with them to ſpend the evening at a " brothel tavern, where he gave me to a pimp, " who gave me to a whore, who gave me to a " bully, who gave me to a pawn-broker, who " gave me to a beau." Vol. II.—Page 98.*

My new maſter was one of thoſe cyphers in nature, who ſeem born only to make up the number of mankind. The poor pittance, which pride of family ſpares from the eldeſt ſon to ſave the reſt from ſtarving, had been juſt enough to purchaſe him a commiſſion in the guards, in which he ſignalized his proweſs on the parade, and talked as big, and looked as bluff as the beſt,

* As this concluſion of the foregoing character is ſo ſhort, it is inſerted to preſerve the connexion, and ſave the reader the trouble of referring,

beſt, while his campaigns were confined to *St. James's Park*, but the proſpect of a war changed his note. The irregularities and licentiouſneſs of a military life now ſhocked his delicacy, and he exchanged for half-pay; and, retaining only the convenient title of *captain*, reſolved to puſh his fortune in the gentler way of matrimony.

For this purpoſe, he directly commenced *beau*, as the fair ſex is ſooneſt caught by the eye, and, when that is pleaſed, ſeldom enquires farther. Accordingly, he now ſtudied nothing but faſhions, as all his care was to procure clothes to keep up to them, which the narrowneſs of his circumſtances made ſo difficult for him to do, that his belly mourned many a time for the finery of his back. Nor was that his only difficulty. The very expenſe of going into company to diſplay that finery was often as diſtreſſing to him as to procure it.

It was on an occaſion of this kind, that I came into his poſſeſſion. His ſhowy appearance, together with his *being one whom every body knew*, making him a convenient *faggot* to fill up thoſe *muſters*, the only end of which is to ſhow the conſequence of the *commanding officer*, by the numbers ſhe can croud together, there was hardly a genteel *route* in town to which he was not invited. Such a diſtinction was the height of his ambition; accordingly, having received a *card* to ſummon him to one the next evening,

he

he was not able to reſiſt the temptation of ſo favourable an opportunity of ſhowing himſelf to the ladies, though his finances were ſo low, that he had no other way to defray the expenſe of his chair, but by applying to ſuch a place as this, *where diſtreſs is preyed upon by profeſſion, and really aggravated under the deceitful appearance of momentary relief*—an expedient, indeed, to which he was well accuſtomed. As ſoon as it was dark, therefore, he came wrapped up in a horſeman's coat, and pulling a laced waiſtcoat out of his boſom, mortgaged it for three guineas, *one of which I was.*

When this weighty tranſaction was concluded, he returned home, and, changing his dreſs, repaired to a coffee-houſe at the court-end of the town, where he talked over the news of the day, with all the ſignificant airs and importance of *one in the ſecret*, confirming every word he ſaid with the authority of *his couſin*, this lord, or *his friend* that duke, till he *careleſly out-ſtayed all his engagements for ſupper*, when a *Welch-rabbit* and three-penny-worth of punch made him amends for the want of a dinner, and he went home ſatisfied.

Well, as I was by this time acquainted with the inconſiſtencies of human life, I could not help being ſtruck with the contradiction between the external appearance and domeſtick œconomy of my new maſter. The former was in all

all the elegance of taſte and affluence, while the latter was regulated by the ſtricteſt parſimony that nature could ſupport. He lodged in a houſe, which opened into a genteel ſtreet, and had a back door into a blind alley, that ſerved him whenever he choſe to go out or come in *incog.* Here, one room up three-pair-of-ſtairs (but the name of the ſtreet over-balanced that, and every other inconvenience) ſerved him for every purpoſe of life, in moſt of which he miniſtered to himſelf, undiſturbed by the company of any one, but his hair-dreſſer, laundreſs, and tailor, at their appointed times. To all others he was conſtantly denied by the people of the houſe, who received all meſſages for him, and returned proper anſwers. But the manner of his life will be beſt deſcribed by the hiſtory of the one day I was in his poſſeſſion, the buſineſs of every day being invariably the ſame.

As he had ſat up late, it was near noon when he aroſe, by which *genteel* indulgence he ſaved coals, for his fire was never lighted till after he was up. He then ſallied out *to breakfaſt* in a tarniſhed laced frock, and his thick-ſoled ſhoes, read the papers in the coffee-houſe *(too ſoon after breakfaſt to take any thing)* and then walked a turn in the Park, till it was time to dreſs for dinner, when he went home, and finding his ſtomach out of order *from his laſt night's debauch,* and

and his *late breakfaſting*, he ſent the maid of the houſe for a baſon of pea-ſoup from the cook's ſhop *to ſettle it*, by the time he had taken which, it was too late for him to think of going any where to dine, *though he had ſeveral appointments with people of the firſt faſhion.* When this frugal meal was over, he ſet about the real buſineſs of the day. He took out and bruſhed his beſt clothes, ſet his ſhirt to the fire to air, put on his ſtockings and ſhoes, and then ſitting down to his toilet, on which his waſhes, paints, tooth-powders, and lip-ſalves were all placed in order, had juſt finiſhed his face, when his hair-dreſſer came, one hour under whoſe hands completed him a firſt rate beau.

When he had contemplated himſelf for ſome time with pride of heart, and practiſed his looks and geſtures at the glaſs, a chair was called, which carried him to a ſcene of equal magnificence and confuſion. From the brilliant appearance of the company, and the eaſe, and ſelf-complacency in all their looks, it ſhould have ſeemed that there was not one poor or unhappy perſon among them. But the caſe of my maſter had convinced me what little faith is to be given to appearances, as I alſo found, upon a nearer view, that many of the gayeſt there were in no better a condition than he.

Having reconnoitred one another ſufficiently to lay in a fund for remarks, and bandied about

about the common cant of compliments, the company ſat down to cards, when the looks of many of them ſoon underwent a change. For *prudential reaſons* my maſter always declined engaging in parties of this nature, but this night all his addreſs could not excuſe him. A lady, *whom he had dreſſed at* for a conſiderable time, happening to come late, unluckily *wanted one*, and ſeeing him idle would take no apology. He complied, therefore, with the beſt grace he could, and invoking fortune with more fervency than he had ever prayed to heaven, *cut in*; when chancing *to fall againſt her*, her ſuperiour luck, or ſkill, aided not a little by his anxiety, ſoon ſtripped him of every ſhilling in his pocket, and ſent him home in a penſive mood, to ſtudy *ways and means* for raiſing another ſupply; and on this occaſion I followed the ſmiles of fortune, and entered into the ſervice of the winner.

CHAP. VIII.

History of CHRYSAL's *new mistress. She is brought into distress by her beauty, from which a lucky interview relieves her. The danger of arguing in favour of inclination against reason. Her friend puts her to school, to learn manners, and afterwards marries her. His family shew impotent resentment, at which he is so enraged, that he makes his will, by which he leaves her his whole fortune; and then dies. An uncommon instance of the good-nature of the world.*

THOUGH my late master had put the best face he could upon the matter, and excused his breaking up the party at the end of the first *rubber*, on a pretence of being taken suddenly sick, my mistress saw through him. "Sick indeed! (said she, laughing) ha! ha! "ha! poor captain! I do not doubt but you "are, and that at heart! I saw it coming upon "you, ever since the first deal, when *I held* "*four by honours!* but I don't wonder at it. "A full rubber was too much. Two guineas "and an half are no trifle to some people!"—

Two or three other visits which she had to pay that evening prevented her making a new party, she only stayed to tell the story of the captain's sickness to every one she knew in the

the room, who all joined in the laugh againſt him.

I ſee you are ſhocked at ſuch an inſtance of inſenſibility; but, if you will reflect a moment, you will find you have no reaſon. Though poverty is attended with many real evils, yet, when the worſt of them are voluntarily encountered to gratify vanity, the pity, otherwiſe due to it, is juſtly turned into contempt; and the efforts uſed to hide it, which are always ſeen through, treated with ridicule and inſult.

The morning after I came into the poſſeſſion of my new miſtreſs, ſhe brought to concluſion an affair of a moſt extraordinary nature, which few women beſide herſelf would have had ſpirit even to undertake. To explain it properly to you, it will be neceſſary to give you a ſhort ſketch of her ſtory.

The gifts of nature are either a bleſſing, or a curſe, according to the uſe made of them. My miſtreſs was born in one of the loweſt claſſes of mankind; the obſcurity of her birth, though, ſeemed to be made amends for, by the endowments of her perſon and mind, which were ſuch as raiſed univerſal admiration, from their firſt infant dawn. But theſe, tempting the licentious ſpoiler, like the beauty of a flower growing in the high-way, loſt their advantage, and proved her ruin for want of proper care.

She had ſcarce paſſed her childhood, when one of thoſe female purveyors for vice, who

go about, like their maſter, ſeeking whom they may deſtroy, to the diſgrace not only of their own ſex, but alſo of human nature, marked her out as proper for her purpoſe. There was no difficulty, either in getting her into her power, or ſeducing her mind. The poverty of her parents made them glad to part with her, without further enquiry, to any one who promiſed to take care of her, only to be delivered from the expenſe of her ſupport, as it had prevented their giving her the leaſt education to form her manners, or inſpire her mind with principles of virtue. Such a ſubject was exactly ſuited for ſo vile an agent to work upon. She took her home; dreſſed her up decently, and, teaching her what account to give of herſelf, proſtituted her, while ſhe could make any profit of her, and then turned her adrift upon the world, to liveas well as ſhe could on the earnings of ſin and wretchedneſs.

I muſt not attempt to deſcribe the life of a common proſtitute! it is too horrible! She had run through the loweſt ſcenes of it for ſome time, when fortune one night threw into her way one of thoſe old debilitated debauchees, who indulge in the ſpeculation after they are paſt the practice of vice. Something in her air and manner, as ſhe *picked him up*, ſtruck him. He took her to a tavern, where he was ſtill more pleaſed with her uncommon ſmartneſs and vivacity.

vacity. "I am cloyed (ſaid he, to himſelf) "with the groſs ignorance of the women of the "town! I hate the impertinent airs of virtue, "which thoſe of better education give them-"ſelves! I'll therefore unite thoſe qualifica-"tions, which ſeparately pleaſe me in both, in "this young creature, who can never offend "me by pretences to virtue, at the ſame time "that the excellence of her underſtanding will "receive, and reward me with the fruits of "the beſt education."——

There was novelty in the whim; and, therefore, he reſolved to carry it into execution. He took her home with him, and, ſending for the moſt eminent maſters in every part of polite education, put her under their care, and incited their application by moſt liberal promiſes of reward.

Young as ſhe was, and hackneyed in every vicious habit, ſhe had a ſufficient ſenſe of the change in her way of life, not to forfeit the advantage by any miſbehaviour or neglect. On the contrary, ſhe applied herſelf ſo cloſely to every thing taught her, and ſhowed a diſpoſition ſo deſirous of improvement in every ſenſe, that her benefactor, proud of the diſcernment which could diſcover ſuch talents under ſo great diſadvantages, became enamoured of the effects of his own benevolence and care. "I have at length found (would he ſay to him-

"ſelf) what I have hitherto ſought in vain—"a woman that can make me happy! Her wit "and underſtanding will enliven the hour of "heavineſs; while a falſe parade of virtue will "never throw a damp on pleaſantry and mirth. "What, though her birth is obſcure! are we "not all deſcended from one common ſtock? "is the blood of a peaſant leſs pure than that "of a prince?—If ſhe has taken a falſe ſtep, "in the weakneſs of her youth, that ſhould be "charged to fate, that led her into temptation "before ſhe had reaſon to reſiſt it!—But all "theſe ſeeming diſadvantages are now turned "in her favour. Her experience in the ways "of the world will make it impoſſible to deceive "her again. Her conſciouſneſs of the mean-"neſs of her own family will give her a proper "ſenſe of the honour of being admitted into "mine, and ſave me from the intolerable "plague of having her pedigree rung in my "ears every hour. Her youth and luxuriance "of conſtitution will alſo ſupply to our children "the defects which too eager a purſuit of plea-"ſure may have made in mine. Let thoſe who "are dependent on the world regard its cen-"ſure; I am above it, and will purſue my own "happineſs, wherever it leads me."

There is nothing more dangerous than ſeeking for arguments in favour of inclination againſt reaſon. Trifles, light as air, will be admitted

admitted as the weightieſt proofs of that which is wiſhed to be proved; and palliatives, barely poſſible, anſwer objections, in their nature unanſwerable. He had taken a liking to her! he had taken it into his head to ſecure the gratification of that liking, by marrying her; and a very little arguing with himſelf in this manner ſoon convinced him, not only of the expediency of ſuch a marriage to his happineſs; but alſo of the obligation he was under of doing that juſtice to her merit, and his own judgement. The conſequence may be eaſily concluded. He married her, as he profeſſed, in obedience to reaſon, rather than to gratify inclination.

But the caſe was very different with the world, which, far from ſeeing the force of his arguments, laughed at him for being taken thus in a ſnare of his own making. His own family, in particular, beheld her with eyes, perhaps, not leſs blinded by intereſt, than his were by inclination; and, depreciating the merit ſhe really had, repreſented his marriage as the mere effect of vicious dotage.

Nothing is ſo ill judged as to ſhow impotent reſentment. It only provokes a return of none effect; and makes a wound incurable, which otherwiſe might have healed of itſelf. Incenſed that they ſhould preſume to cenſure actions which they could not control, he directly made his will, by which he gave away the inheritance

of his anceſtors from his own blood, leaving his whole fortune to his wife, as a teſtimony of his unaltered regard for her, and to ſhow his reſentment to them; ſoon after which he died.

This was more than her moſt ſanguine hopes could ever have riſen to. She was in the prime of life; and poſſeſſed of a fortune to afford her all its pleaſures. Theſe advantages (and I ſhould add her beauty, which was in the perfection of a ripened bloom) naturally attracted a number of admirers of different kinds, and with as different views, who all thought themſelves ſure of her, from the circumſtances of her paſt life. Needy adventurers (ſuch as my late maſter) paid court to her fortune, in the matrimonial way; while her beauty attracted the more dangerous addreſs of thoſe, who meant no more than pleaſure. But ſhe was guarded againſt both. She had taſted ſomething of the ſweets of virtuous reputation, and knew the value of it too well to forfeit it entirely again by compliance with the latter; and her pride and experience ſet her above all the ſchemes of the former.

She lived thus for ſome time in the higheſt happineſs of which ſhe had any idea, for ſhe was a ſtranger to that falſe delicacy, which creates itſelf imaginary uneaſineſſes, and palls the enjoyment of preſent pleaſures. She was admitted

admitted into good company, where her behaviour, if not abſolutely approved of, was ſtill received with good-natured allowances, as much better than might have been expected from the circumſtances of her life; and ſhe herſelf treated with tenderneſs, to encourage her to perſeverance in ſo uncommon an amendment. But this happineſs was too great to laſt long undiſturbed.

CHAP. IX.

The common conſequence of over-doing things. Her huſband's relations find out a flaw in his will. The comfort of having good lawyers to keep up a client's ſpirits. For the advantage of having two ſtrings to her bow, ſhe enters into an engagement of marriage, under a heavy penalty. The event of her law-ſuit ſhows the prudence of this precaution. She is caſt; her lover flies off, and ſhe ſues him for the penalty of his engagement. He begs the money among his friends, and then by a nice fineſſe plays her own game back upon her, and flings her off with half. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

IT daily happens that men defeat their own intentions, by carrying them too far. Hurried away by his paſſions, her huſband, in making his will, had exceeded the power veſted in him by the law, and ſo, by ſtriving to give her more than he had a right, really gave her much leſs. But it was a conſiderable time before his family recovered ſufficiently from the aſtoniſhment and confuſion with which ſuch a ſtroke overwhelmed them, to perceive this, and be able to purſue proper meaſures for taking advantage of it.

The firſt notice my miſtreſs received of this affair, was by an offer they made her, to refer their

their claim to private deciſion, in order to avoid the expenſe and trouble of a law-ſuit. But, though the former part of her life had impreſſed her with horrour at the very name of the law, ſhe would not liſten to ſuch a propoſal, without taking *proper* advice, the reſult of which may be eaſily judged.

Lawyers will never loſe a good client for want of giving hopes. Her's perſuaded her ſo fully of the juſtice of her cauſe, and gave her ſuch poſitive aſſurance of ſucceſs, that ſhe reſolved to ſpare no expenſe to obtain it. Though *right* and *wrong* are ſo eſſentially different from each other, they yet are ſometimes involved in ſuch intricacies, by the induſtry of thoſe whoſe profeſſion it is to diſtinguiſh between them, that it is difficult to know which is which. It was ſo in this caſe. They had raiſed ſuch clouds, that reaſon could not ſee through them; and ſo every one was left to ſpeak according to inclination.

While matters were in this ſituation, one of her admirers thought it a proper time to puſh his fortune with her. His rank and expectations in life raiſed him above the neceſſity of ſuch a ſceme; but avarice will ſtoop to any thing; and he would gladly have taken her, with all her faults, for the ſake of her fortune, the certainty of her eſtabliſhing her right to which he had taken care to be well aſſured of

by ſages learned in the law, before he laid ſiege to her. This, however, he was far from avowing. He pleaded the moſt diſintereſted love, and preſſed for a return with all the ardency of deſire.

But, though ſhe could not do ſo much injuſtice to her charms, as to doubt their power of inſpiring ſuch a paſſion, ſhe poſitively refuſed to liſten to any propoſals of marriage till her law-ſuit ſhould be decided, *from a generous fear of involving him in inconveniences*, which her lawyers poſitively aſſured her could never happen; as he, *with equal generoſity*, founded on the like aſſurances, offered to marry her while it was ſtill depending; whereas, the truth of the matter was with both, that *he thought he could make a better bargain, as ſhe knew ſhe muſt a worſe*, if it ſhould be concluded, till every thing was abſolutely ſettled.

They had played this game upon each other for ſome time, when a diffident word dropped by one of her lawyers, as the day of deciſion drew near, determined her to change her ſyſtem, and make ſure of ſomething for fear of the worſt. Accordingly, the next time her lover viſited her, on his repeating his profeſſions of the violence of his paſſion, and offering, as a proof of its diſintereſtedneſs, to enter into a mutual engagement of marriage, as ſoon as the ſuit ſhould be ended one way or other, under the penalty of a large

large ſum of money on the refuſer, ſhe let herſelf be overcome by ſuch an inſtance of ſincerity, and, taking him at his word, ſigned the engagement directly.

The event juſtified this caution; for, after all the aſſurances of ſucceſs by which ſhe had been led on by her lawyers to run into every expenſe they could deviſe, juſtice appeared ſo ſtrongly in favour of her opponents, that ſhe *was caſt*; and a conſiderable part of the eſtate of her huſband adjudged to return directly to his family; and the reſt after her death.

Though what remained to her was more than ſufficient to ſupport her in the genteeleſt manner, ſhe could not but feel at firſt a fall from ſo high hopes; but her ſpirit had been too well exerciſed in the beginning of her life, to yield long to any thing; and ſhe had almoſt got the better of it, when ſomething that piqued her reſentment rouſed her effectually. Among all the *friends* who came on this occaſion *to gratify the inſolence of condoling her misfortune*, ſhe was not a little ſurpriſed never to ſee the face of her lover. As ſhe could not be at a loſs for the mean motive of ſuch behaviour, ſhe might poſſibly have treated it with the contempt it deſerved, had not neceſſity urged her to ſhow a warmer reſentment.

The expenſes of her law-ſuit had involved her in debts (for ſhe never lowered her living,

depending on the aſſurances given her of ſucceſs) which were now demanded with an importunity that perplexed her. This was juſt at the time when ſhe took notice of the deſertion of her lover. The urgency of her creditors, therefore, ſuggeſted it to her, to call upon him to fulfill his engagement of marriage, which his conduct convinced her he would forfeit the penalty rather than do, by which means ſhe ſhould puniſh him for his raſhneſs, and extricate herſelf from her difficulties at the ſame time; for, had ſhe thought that he would fulfil it, there was nothing ſhe would not have ſuffered, ſooner than link her fate to him.

There is ſomething in a woman's calling upon a man to marry her ſo contrary to thoſe notions of delicacy, on which the ſuperiour claſs of the female ſex value themſelves, that, perhaps, no other woman of her rank could have prevailed upon herſelf to do it. But ſhe had not been born in, nor bred up with expectations of that rank; her notions, therefore, were of a coarſer complexion; and, though ſhe had learned the external modes of behaviour, *the trick of complaiſance*, ſhe had been put to ſchool too late in life, to change her ſentiments ſo far as to make her think it neceſſary to ſacrifice ſo powerful motives as reſentment and intereſt to a delicacy that appeared to her merely fantaſtick.

The moment, therefore, the thought occurred, ſhe applied once more to her lawyer; and

and by his advice wrote a letter to her lover, in which ſhe directly claimed the performance of his engagement. But, as this was no more than his heart told him he muſt expect (for he would have done the very ſame thing himſelf) he was prepared how to anſwer her. Accordingly, he wrote to her in the moſt artful manner, *excuſing his not having been to wait upon her ſince the fatal deciſion of her law-ſuit, on account of the pain he muſt feel at ſeeing her, when he had loſt all hopes of ever calling her his; for, as her generoſity would not permit her to marry while there was only a poſſibility of ſuch a misfortune, he could not ſuppoſe that her ſenſe of honour and juſtice would now, when it had actually happened; and for this reaſon he deſired that ſhe would pleaſe to ſend him his engagement, not that it was of any conſequence, as he would return her's, to whom he wiſhed the higheſt happineſs in every ſcene and view of life*— Such a refuſal was juſt what ſhe wanted! ſhe, therefore, inſtantly commenced a ſuit at law with him, to recover the penalty of his engagement, which he had thus forfeited to her.

The care he had taken himſelf, to make the engagement as binding as poſſible, precluding every hope of defeating her claim; and his knowledge of her temper convincing him that it would be in vain to attempt prevailing on her to drop it now ſhe had once begun, he had recourſe to an expedient to extricate him from this

this difficulty, of the ſame mean kind with that which brought it upon him. Accordingly, though he was well enough able to pay the penalty himſelf, as he did not chooſe to fulfil his engagement by marrying, he put on a poor face, and went begging to all his relations for their aſſiſtance, pleading poverty, and alledging the diſgrace it would bring upon the whole family if he ſhould be obliged to marry ſuch a woman, whom he repreſented in the blackeſt colours, exaggerating every circumſtance of her life. Though this might juſtly have been retorted upon himſelf, for ever thinking of her, they took pity on his diſtreſs, and raiſed the money for him, by a general contribution.

Such ſucceſs encouraged him to hope for further, and try the force of his eloquence upon my miſtreſs. For this purpoſe, he deſired an interview, which ſhe had with much reluctance conſented to give him, the next morning after I came into her poſſeſſion.

I had ſeen vice and folly in a variety of ſhapes, but never did the human heart appear to me in ſo contemptible a light, as his upon this occaſion. He began his attack with flattery, profeſſing the higheſt reſpect, and lamenting, in the moſt paſſionate terms, that the difficulty of his circumſtances would not permit him to have the happineſs of marrying her, and appealed to her generoſity and juſtice, as before, for a releaſe from an engagement, that it muſt be the ruin of

them

them both to fulfil. But all was in vain. She ſcarce deigned to make him any anſwer; and that only to tell him, that his profeſſions and arguments were equally ineffectual to alter a reſolution, which the baſeneſs of his behaviour alone had made her take. Not quite diſcouraged, though, by ſuch a repulſe, he inſtantly changed his method of application. He threw himſelf at her feet, implored her compaſſion on his poverty, and offered, as the utmoſt it would permit him to do, to pay her down half the penalty directly, concluding with ſaying, that, if ſhe refuſed to accept of that, he had no other reſource, but even to fulfil his engagement and marry her.

This was fighting the Devil at his own weapons. The mention of marriage was a ſtroke ſhe was not prepared for. Startled at the thought, therefore, as ſhe knew not what deſpair might drive him to, ſhe agreed to his propoſal, and ſo they divided the money between them (for he prudently pocketed the other half himſelf, as he could not think of offering ſuch an affront to his friends as to return any part of their bounty) and were equal gainers by a bargain, in which each out-witted the other.

Though what my miſtreſs got fell ſhort of her expectation, it anſwered the double end of gratifying her reſentment, and paying her debts, on the latter of which occaſions *I left her ſervice.*

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome out-of-the-way remarks on matrimony. Deſcription and hiſtory of his new maſter.* CHRYSAL *vindicates his uſing a common expreſſion. His maſter's firſt riſe from a beggar to a foot-boy. He gains his maſter's favour, of which he makes the uſe natural to be expected from his firſt education. Some account of a relation of his* PRINCIPAL's. *The danger of giving advice.* CHRYSAL's *maſter inſinuates himſelf into the* COLONEL's *liking, and undermines his principal in his regard.*

I Have obſerved, in the courſe of this account of my laſt miſtreſs, that you have been ſhocked at the thought of a man's marrying a woman in her circumſtances. To you, who view life only by the light of reaſon, it muſt certainly appear moſt unaccountable; but better acquaintance with the ways of the world would reconcile you to that, and many other things equally groſs and ſhocking in ſpeculation.

Marriage is a mutual truſt of honour. A man's marrying a woman, therefore, who has loſt her honour, is truſting his whole fortune to a bankrupt, who has no ſecurity to give for that truſt;

truſt; a fool-hardineſs that muſt proceed either from a conſciouſneſs of having himſelf no honour to loſe, a total diſregard to the loſs, or an affectation of acting on different principles from the reſt of mankind, as a proof of being above their prejudices. Where her honour indeed has been loſt to himſelf, juſtice makes it a duty upon him to repair her loſs by marriage; but then that very marriage is a puniſhment for his crime, as it muſt want the eſſential happineſs of confidence; for he will be always ready to ſuſpect, that the diſpoſition which betrayed her into errour with him may have the ſame effect with others. Nor is this ſuſpicion unnatural.

I ſee you would argue from the habitual, avowed incontinence of man, that this truſt of honour is not equal, and therefore cannot be obliging. But this is judging without duely conſidering the ſubject. Chaſtity is, in its nature, a virtue equally the duty of both ſexes to obſerve, and, with regard to ſociety in general, the violation of it is equally criminal in both; but in thoſe nearer connexions of life, the intereſt of which is the more immediate object of human attention, the conſequences of that violation in woman are attended with ſo much greater inconveniences than in man, that, in reſpect to them, the crime is obviouſly leſs pardonable in her than in him; and, for this reaſon,

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome out-of-the-way remarks on matrimony. Deſcription and hiſtory of his new maſter.* CHRYSAL *vindicates his uſing a common expreſſion. His maſter's firſt riſe from a beggar to a foot-boy. He gains his maſter's favour, of which he makes the uſe natural to be expected from his firſt education. Some account of a relation of his* PRINCIPAL's. *The danger of giving advice.* CHRYSAL's *maſter inſinuates himſelf into the* COLONEL's *liking, and undermines his principal in his regard.*

I Have obſerved, in the courſe of this account of my laſt miſtreſs, that you have been ſhocked at the thought of a man's marrying a woman in her circumſtances. To you, who view life only by the light of reaſon, it muſt certainly appear moſt unaccountable; but better acquaintance with the ways of the world would reconcile you to that, and many other things equally groſs and ſhocking in ſpeculation.

Marriage is a mutual truſt of honour. A man's marrying a woman, therefore, who has loſt her honour, is truſting his whole fortune to a bankrupt, who has no ſecurity to give for that truſt;

truſt; a fool-hardineſs that muſt proceed either from a conſciouſneſs of having himſelf no honour to loſe, a total diſregard to the loſs, or an affectation of acting on different principles from the reſt of mankind, as a proof of being above their prejudices. Where her honour indeed has been loſt to himſelf, juſtice makes it a duty upon him to repair her loſs by marriage; but then that very marriage is a puniſhment for his crime, as it muſt want the eſſential happineſs of confidence; for he will be always ready to ſuſpect, that the diſpoſition which betrayed her into errour with him may have the ſame effect with others. Nor is this ſuſpicion unnatural.

I ſee you would argue from the habitual, avowed incontinence of man, that this truſt of honour is not equal, and therefore cannot be obliging. But this is judging without duely conſidering the ſubject. Chaſtity is, in its nature, a virtue equally the duty of both ſexes to obſerve, and, with regard to ſociety in general, the violation of it is equally criminal in both; but in thoſe nearer connexions of life, the intereſt of which is the more immediate object of human attention, the conſequences of that violation in woman are attended with ſo much greater inconveniences than in man, that, in reſpect to them, the crime is obviouſly leſs pardonable in her than in him; and, for this reaſon,

ſon, *this virtue of chaſtity is made in a peculiar manner, the honour of woman*; while *the honour of man* is placed *in other virtues*, from which ſhe receives as much advantage, as he does from her chaſtity; and, therefore, the truſt of honour is mutual and equal——In diſtinguiſhing thus between *honour* and *virtue*, I ſpeak according to the notions of mankind; in their own nature, there is no diſtinction between them.

There was ſomething in the whole appearance of the perſon to whom my miſtreſs *paid me away*, that made me expect to ſee a character of a caſt which I had not yet met with among mankind. His looks were ſly, methodical, and plodding. Practice had fixed upon his paſſive face the hollow varniſh of a ſervile ſmile; and an over-acted affectation of polite behaviour made his natural awkardneſs truely ridiculous. But under all this, I could ſee a depth of deſign, and a latitude of principle, equal to any *great* attempt, the ſucceſs of which ſhould in the opinion of the world determine the quality of that *greatneſs*, whether *villainy* or *virtue*.

That knowledge of his life which is neceſſary to explain his character, and account for the principles upon which he acted conſiſtently his manifold part, will be compriſed in a few words. Sprung from the dregs of the people, and turned looſe upon the world to ſhift for himſelf, as ſoon as he was able to crawl, he took his

his ſtand about the houſe of a perſon in buſineſs, where he hardly earned a morſel of broken victuals, by running of errands, cleaning ſhoes, and ſuch other offices as are performed by thoſe *ſervants* of *ſervants*.

I ſee you wonder at my ſaying he was ſprung from *the dregs of the people*, as if difference of rank could make any alteration in the eſſential equality of human nature; but without entering into a diſcuſſion of *undetermined* points, on both ſides of which much has been ſaid with equal ſtrength of reaſon, the beſt obſervation of the power of early example, to impreſs thoſe principles which are to govern the future life, will ſufficiently juſtify my uſing the expreſſion here.

The patience with which he was obliged to bear the cuffs and kicks of thoſe worſt of tyrants, who always wantonly revenge tenfold upon their wretched underlings whatever they ſuffer themſelves, taught him that hypocriſy, and abject ſubmiſſion to every thing that might any way ſerve his convenience, which afterwards proved the groundwork of his fortune; as the example of his parents, who got their living by retailing to the poor the meaneſt neceſſaries of life, initiated him ſo early into every ſpecies of low fraud and chicane, that they became abſolutely natural to him, and invariably ruled the conduct of his life.

He

He had been ſome time in this hopeful courſe of education, when an accident opened him an opportunity of ſhowing what a progreſs he had made in it. A brother of the perſon, about whoſe houſe he picked up the ſcraps that kept him alive, happening to ſee one of the ſervants beating him unmercifully, interfered from mere humanity, and ſaved him. The marks he bore of his beating raiſed a curioſity to know how he had deſerved it; when he gave ſo ſeemingly innocent, and pitiable an account of himſelf, and attributed the ſervant's cruelty ſo artfully to his having refuſed to do ſomething for him, which was improper for him to do, that the young gentleman believed him, and taking compaſſion on his diſtreſs, admitted him into the family, to wait upon himſelf, by which he was delivered from his dependance on the other ſervants, and protected from their future inſults.

The humility with which he behaved himſelf, in this firſt ſtep of his advancement, his aſſiduity and ſeeming attachment to his maſter ſoon won his good opinion ſo far, that he diſpenſed with his attendance, and ſent him to ſchool, where he applied himſelf ſo cloſely, and made ſuch a proficiency, that his maſter took him into his own buſineſs, in which his ſobriety, diligence, and obedient temper gained his confidence ſo entirely, that, as ſoon as ever he thought him capable, he admitted him into fellowſhip with himſelf, and abſolutely

abſolutely reſigned the management of his whole buſineſs to him.

It may naturally be ſuppoſed, that he did not neglect to improve ſuch an opportunity of practiſing the leſſons he had learned in his youth. He ſecreted the profits of all the buſineſs, which his principal was not indiſpenſibly obliged to be perſonally engaged in; he ſupplanted him with ſuch as he could of his cuſtomers; he cheated of conſiderable ſums of money ſuch others, as long experience of his (the principal's) honeſty had put off their guard with him; and took every occaſion of inſinuating to the world, under the moſt effectual diſguiſe of friendly concern and complaint, his negligence and incapacity; at the ſame time, that he profeſſed to himſelf the moſt implicit reſpect and obedience, and ſeemed ambitious of ſhowing his gratitude and attachment, by performing the ſame ſervile offices which had been his firſt occupation about him.

But all this was trifling in compariſon with the ſtroke he made againſt him, in his own family. There was a near relation of his principal's, who was indebted to his friendly aſſiſtance for the firſt ſtep of his riſe to *the rank of a colonel in the army*. Nature had been laviſh to him in the endowments of mind and body; but pride marred the bleſſing, and turned them all to his diſadvantage. Confidence in the external graces of his perſon made him neglect the improvement of his underſtanding,

derſtanding, while an affectation of *ſingularity*, which is always aſſumed as a maſk to hide real ignorance, made him ſet his own opinion in oppoſition to the eſtabliſhed judgement of mankind.

As the conduct of ſuch a man muſt neceſſarily be irregular, his relation and friend, my maſter's principal, exerted the authority of thoſe characters, and frequently reproved him in the ſincerity and well-meaning of his heart. The notion that this liberty, which when properly taken is the higheſt proof of regard, was aſſumed on the ſcore of obligation, gave offenſe to the captious haughtineſs of the *colonel*'s temper, and eſtranged an eſteem, which it ought to have confirmed.

This was an opportunity for my maſter to diſplay his talents. He ſtudied the temper of the *colonel*, and paid court to his caprices. He cringed to his haughtineſs, bore his inſults, and miniſtered to his vices, with an implicit ſubmiſſion to his ſuperiour ſenſe and judgement, which he received as the only ſtandard of right and wrong.

The contraſt between his complaiſance, and the ſuperiority which the *colonel* thought his relation aſſumed by giving him advice, inſenſibly transferred to my maſter that regard which his principal loſt. As this was what he had all along aimed at, he omitted nothing to widen the breach, by inſinuations ſo artfully conveyed as to aggravate the offenſe taken by the *colonel*, and yet if

repeated

repeated would bear a ſenſe directly oppoſite, and ſeem to ſpring entirely from friendly concern, ſhould a reconciliation between them bring his practiſes to light. But an event, that he could not ſcheme for, removed every ſuch apprehenſion, and rivetted his influence beyond his moſt ſanguine hopes.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

Further account of the COLONEL. CHRYSAL'*s maſter, in conjunction with a female aſſociate proper for his purpoſe, completes his ſcheme of alienating the* COLONEL'*s regard from his family, of which he gives a proof of a moſt extraordinary nature. A remarkable inſtance of* CHRYSAL'*s maſter's talents for a particular kind of wit, with a ſtriking account of the worthy manner in which he and his fair aſſociate acquitted themſelves of the truſt repoſed in them by the* COLONEL.

VAIN of the beauty of his perſon, *the colonel* prided himſelf in an opinion, that there was no woman whoſe virtue could reſiſt his addreſſes. This ſelf-conceit, which the frailty of the lower claſs of females had firſt given riſe to, was confirmed by his ſucceſs with one, whoſe fortune and education ſhould have ſecured her againſt his attacks. The glory of ſuch a conqueſt ſatisfied his vanity; and the pleaſure of having her on his own terms ſo endeared her to him, that he thought not of any other. One thing only gave him concern about her; which was, in whoſe care he ſhould leave her, when the buſineſs of the *campaign* called him into the *field*.

But

But in this he was not long at a loſs. The humble, implicit attachment of my maſter pointed him out as the perſon, in every reſpect, moſt proper for ſuch a truſt. To him, therefore, he committed her at his departure, hugging himſelf in the happineſs of having ſuch a miſtreſs, and ſuch a friend.

The nature of this truſt neceſſarily brought on an intimacy between my maſter and his *charge*. Intimacies between the ſexes are dangerous in any circumſtances: but in their's, where ſhe could not even make pretence to that virtue which could be her only guard, the conſequence is obvious. From this time, they joined their intereſts, and laid their heads together to eſtrange him from his own family, particularly my maſter's principal, who, in caſe of death, had the firſt claim, from law and nature, to his fortune.

In carrying on this ſcheme, they played into each other's hands with ſuch addreſs at his return, that, when he was going to the next *campaign*, he made a will, by which he gave, not only his own large acquiſitions, but alſo the inheritance of his anceſtors, between them, in ſuch a manner as plainly ſhowed a wrong mind, and ſupported his bequeſt with ſuch reaſons, as were an inſult to the laws and religion of his country; at the ſame time, that they perpetuated the infamy of thoſe, to whom it was made, by arguing expreſsly in favour of the vices which had gained

them this mark of his regard; and this will, the ſubſtance of which ſatisfied them for the circumſtances, he left in the hands of my maſter.

In this ſituation matters ſtood between the three, when I came into his poſſeſſion. When he had finiſhed the drudgery of the day, he went as uſual to ſpend his evening agreeably with his *charge*.

There was one ſpecies of what is called *wit*, upon his expertneſs in which my maſter valued himſelf not a little. This was telling a fictitious ſtory with ſo grave a face, and corroborating it with ſuch plauſible circumſtances as to raiſe the hearer's anxiety, and then to laugh at the eaſy faith that could be ſo *taken in*. Low as the merit of *ſuch wit* was, at the beſt, in him it had none at all. His fictions were no better than downright *lies*, deſtitute of imagination or humour, and corroborated with nothing but *new-coined oaths* and *imprecations*, fit to afford entertainment only to the damned.

With an eſſay of this kind he reſolved to entertain his miſtreſs this evening. Exerting, therefore, all his command of countenance, "My deareſt love (ſaid he with a melancholy look, and deep-drawn ſigh, as he entered the room) "I have received bad news, *blaſt my* "*eyes!* there has been a battle, in which our "fool"——

"Has

" Has not been killed! (interrupted ſhe, ſnatching the word out of his mouth) " that is " bad news, indeed; but another battle may " afford better."——

I ſee you were ſtruck with horrour at my repeating the imprecation he made uſe of on this occaſion. Inſtead, therefore, of intermixing them with every period of his diſcourſe, as he always does, I will in their place make a pauſe thus, ——, which will ſerve as well, for he uſes them, in general, as no more than mere expletives.

" No! (anſwered he, ſhrugging up his " ſhoulders) that chance is loſt for ever. —— " He has received a wound ——, which, with- " out endangering his life, has diſabled him " from further ſervice, ſo that we ſhall be bleſt " with his company ——, for the reſt of our " lives."

" Curſed, you ſhould ſay! But is there no " way to be thought of to prevent it? Could " not proper application be made to the ſur- " geons?"

" All is too late! his leg was taken off di- " rectly ——; and the danger entirely over, " when the account came away; as you may " ſee by his letter, in which he writes me word, " ——, that he hopes to be at home with us, " in a month, to leave us no more. Eh! what " have I done with his letter?—It ſhould be

" in this pocket! I certainly have left it behind " me, in my confuſion.—But you'll ſee it ſoon " enough. He ſends his love to you; and bids " me tell you, he would have wrote to you, " but was prevented by company, ſo that you " ſee he cannot be in any danger ——. But " he'll make you amends. I ſee how every " thing will be ——. He'll marry you, as ſoon " as he returns ——; that he may introduce you " into his family, who will treat you with forced " civility, in order to get him into their hands " again. I ſee very well ——, how every " thing will happen."

" No! that ſhall never happen! I hate them- " ſelves, and deſpiſe their civility. I had ra- " ther bear the ſneers and inſults of the world " than that. Nor will I marry him, let what " will be my fate! his inſolent, capricious hu- " mour is ſcarce to be bor'n now; though he " curbs it, becauſe I am at my liberty to leave " him. What would it then be, were I to be " his ſlave for life? I had rather feign penitence, " and throw myſelf on the compaſſion of my " own family, than plunge into ſuch miſery. " Marriage on any terms is a ſtate I deſpiſe, " but with him I abjure it."

This paſſion was ſuch a triumph to my maſter, that he could keep his countenance no longer. " Ha! ha! ha! a fair *humbug*, damn me! " (ſaid he, burſting out into a horſe-laugh) your

" humble

" humble ſervant, madam! I thought you could " not be *taken in*. Ha! ha! ha! a fair " *humbug*, damn me."'

" *Taken in!*" (ſaid ſhe, vexed at being played upon, but more pleaſed that it was no worſe) " how can you take delight in ſuch a low- " liv'd trick? If I could not ſhow my wit in a " better manner, I am ſure I would give up all " pretenſions to it."

" All poor ſpite and malice! But, don't fret " for it. Come! we'll kiſs and friends, and " think no more of the matter! only remember " not to brag another time that you cannot be " *taken in*, though, ha! ha! ha!"

Every thing being thus made up, their converſation for the reſt of the evening was ſuch as may be ſuppoſed between perſons of their caſt, and in their ſituation. They gloried in the ſucceſs of their ſchemes upon their common dupe, *the colonel*; they formed plans for ſpending his fortune, ſhould any lucky accident put an end to his life; they ridiculed the pride and ſelf-ſufficiency of which they had taken advantage; and concluded in their uſual way, with proving, in each other's arms, *the juſtneſs* of his confidence in their fidelity.

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL'S *maſter receives an account of the death of the Colonel. He finds after much deliberation that he cannot fling his worthy aſſociate out of the whole ſpoil, and therefore prudently reſolves to ſhare it with her by a marriage, of which he draws a comfortable picture. He urges his ſuit, and ſhe ſtrives to evade it, by arguments conſiſtent with both their characters. He carries his point in a particular manner.*

BUT all this harmony was ſoon diſturbed for ever, by the accompliſhment of the very ſchemes it was founded on, which was much nearer than they imagined. The firſt news my maſter received on his return home next morning, was that *the colonel* had been killed in a late battle. This was an intereſting event; he directly locked himſelf up in his cloſet, and taking out the will, though he had often read it before, ſtudied every ſyllable of it over and over, to try if there was any poſſibility for him to *fling* his own and *the colonel*'s common miſtreſs, and get the whole fortune himſelf; but he had the mortification to find that this exceeded all his ſagacity, and that the whole will muſt ſtand or fall together.

After ſome, not the moſt pleaſing, meditation, therefore, "And ſo! (ſaid he, biting his nether "lip,

" lip, and turning up his eyes, with an execra-
" tion too horrid to be repeated) I have been
" labouring all this while to get a fortune for
" this *brimſtone!* A very pretty reward, truely,
" for ſupplanting my beſt benefactor! it were
" better for me, that even he had it, than ſhe;
" for then I might not only enjoy my ſhare of
" it as it goes, along with him; but alſo very
" probably cheat him out of moſt of it, in the
" end. What, though I am to have it after her
" death, may not ſhe live as long as I! Be-
" ſide, I have made away with the greateſt part
" of the money, and ſo am liable to be *blown up*
" and undone, whenever ſhe thinks proper to
" call it in; for I know too much of her, to
" expect that ſhe ſhould ſhow favour to any
" one, when once in her power. No! that
" ſhall never be! I have it in my power to ſet
" aſide the whole unnatural, nonſenſical will,
" and I will do it, if ſhe refuſes to come into
" terms with me. Such a ſacrifice of my own
" intereſt to gratitude and honeſty, as this will
" appear, will gain me ſo great reputation, that
" I ſhall make a better fortune myſelf in a lit-
" tle time; and as to what I have embezzled,
" I know by experience that I can *ſink* that
" upon my wiſe principal at a proper time, as
" I have done more before now; ſo that after
" all I may find honeſty to be the beſt policy,
" as the ſaying is. Well! be that as it will, I

" am reſolved to be honeſt to myſelf firſt, and " do that which ſhall ſerve my own intereſt " beſt, without regard to proverb or opinion. " Let me conſider, then! Suppoſe I marry her; " and ſo get poſſeſſion of all at once. But the " devil of it is, that I muſt take her into the " bargain; and I know her too well for that, " if I could help it. She may moſt likely ſerve " me the ſame trick with ſomebody elſe, that " ſhe has ſerved this fool with me; *once a whore,* " *and always a whore.* However, I muſt take " my chance for that. Cunning as ſhe is, ſhe " ſhall not cuckold me eaſily. If I am not a " match for her ſhe muſt be able to outwit " the devil himſelf; ſo, happy come lucky, I'll " e'en venture."

Having reaſoned himſelf into this prudent reſolution, he would loſe no time; but went to her directly, to carry it into execution. As ſoon as he met her, " I have brought you news now " (ſaid he) in earneſt. News that will be ei- " ther good, or bad, according as you take it."

" Pſhaw! (anſwered ſhe, ſlightingly) this is " more of your *wit*, I ſuppoſe. But for hea- " ven's ſake leave off making a fool of yourſelf, " and teazing me. I am quite ſick of ſuch " ſtuff."

" *Strike me to the centre* (replied he, paſſionate- " ly) but I am ſerious. I have this moment re- " ceived an account, that *the colonel* is actually " dead. He was killed in the late battle."

The

The look with which he ſaid this had more weight with her than all the oaths and imprecations he could utter, for, much as he was maſter of his countenance, he could not conceal the agitation of his mind "Dead! (interrupted ſhe, eagerly) thank heaven! then all my "fears are over."

"Aye! (replied he, dryly) but it is well if "your hopes are not alſo over with them!"

"How! What do you mean? Has he not "made a will, by which all his fortune comes "directly to me? For heaven's ſake do not "torture me in this manner."

"Yes! he has made a will, it is true. But "don't you know that the laſt letter I received "from him revoked it, ſo that every thing goes "now to his family, for he lived not long "enough to make another, after he received "his wound; though that is no great loſs to "you, for, from what he ſaid when he was "dying, it would not have been much in your "favour."

"But, did you not promiſe me, that you "would ſuppreſs that revocation, in caſe any "thing of this kind ſhould happen; which you "ſaid you had it in your power to do, as your "principal was fool enough to promiſe you, "that he would never open any letters that "ſhould come directed to you from the army, "as he had a right to do, by which means it

" had luckily eſcaped coming to his know-
" ledge."

" Perhaps I may have ſaid ſo! But, do you
" think I have no more conſcience than to
" conceal ſuch a thing; and rob a man to whom
" I am under ſo great obligations?"

" Conſcience! For heaven's ſake, I conjure
" you again, do not torture me any longer.
" Speak of conſcience to thoſe who do not
" know you. I have had ſufficient proof, that
" your *intereſt* is your *conſcience*; and this will
" ſurely determine you to ſerve me, as you
" ſerve yourſelf at the ſame time. Is not all to
" come to you at my death?"

" But what am I to do in the mean while?
" Come, then, as you ſay you know me ſo
" well, I'll offer you a fair propoſal, that ſhall
" make it my *preſent intereſt* (for that is what I
" regard) to ſerve you; and your *future intereſt*,
" on which you lay ſo great a ſtreſs, to ſerve
" me. Suppoſe we join our intereſts in all
" things, and marry. By this expedient I ſhall
" come directly into the enjoyment of the for-
" tune; and your children will inherit it."

" Marry! (exclaimed ſhe, ſtarting in ſur-
" priſe) what could put ſuch a ſtrange thought
" into your head, who know my ſentiments on
" that unnatural ſtate of ſuperſtition and
" ſlavery? No! that, of all things, I can
" never come into. But, I ſee you are at

" your

" your *humbugging* again. The profeſſions, and " oaths of friendſhip, you have ſo often made " me"———

" Were all but wind (anſwered he) and " have left no trace behind them. But this " kind of talking anſwers no end. The whole " depends on the one word by which you " anſwer me this ſhort queſtion—'Will you " marry me? Or will you not?' If you con- " ſent, I will ſecrete the papers that ſet aſide " the will, and ſo we ſhall ſhare the fortune " between us. If you refuſe, I will give them " up to his family, who will directly defeat " your claim, and then you may follow for " your living that libertine way of life you " appear ſo fond of; for I have no notion of " damning my character in this world, and my " ſoul in the next, to ſerve any other but my- " ſelf. Conſider, therefore, before you ſpeak, " as I will go directly from you to them, if you " refuſe me."

Such a menace was not ineffectual to one who knew him ſo well. " Will nothing elſe " ſatisfy you? (replied ſhe, burſting into tears.) " No part of the fortune; and to continue as " we are at preſent, man and wife in every " thing but the curſed ceremony?"

" No! that ceremony is the very thing I " want, and nothing elſe; becauſe that only " can give me a right to your fortune; for, as

" to your perſon, I would not have you think " I ſet any value on that! I have long ſince had " enough of it: and for ſharing the fortune, " I am reſolved I will have all, or none; and " this is the reaſon why I make you ſuch " an offer; for, otherwiſe, I aſſure you I hate " marriage as much as you poſſibly can. So " let me have your anſwer directly, for I will " not trifle thus a moment longer."

The manner in which he ſaid this left her no room to doubt his reſolution. " Well then " (replied ſhe, ſighing) if you will have it ſo, it " muſt be ſo; and I conſent, becauſe I cannot " help it. But when is this bleſſed marriage " to be ſolemniſed?"

" As for that, I am in no more hurry than " you. All I deſire is, that you will directly " ſign a promiſe of marriage, whenever I think " proper to call upon you. I'll go this inſtant, " and draw it up; and leave you to conſider " how much better this is for us both, than to " have diſagreed, and let all go to his family."

He waited not for a reply; nor was long before he returned with the deed, which ſhe ſigned with evident reluctance.

CHAP. XIII.

Account of the methods which CHRYSAL's *maſter took to obviate the effects of his principal's reſentment, with the characteriſtick converſation that paſſed between them, on the former's avowing the colonel's will.* CHRYSAL's *maſter overſhoots his mark, and provokes his principal to do more than he ever intended. An uncommon inſtance of the juſtice of the world.* CHRYSAL's *maſter obliges the lady to court him in her turn, and at length marries her. The conſequences of ſuch a marriage, and fruits of the ſucceſs of all their ſchemes.*

THIS point being ſettled, the next thing was to produce *the colonel's* will, the thought of doing which gave him ſome alarm, in ſpite of all his fortitude, as it would be throwing off the maſk he had worn all his life, and declaring war with his principal, who he judged from himſelf would not fail to publiſh to the world the meanneſs of his original, and the miſery from which his compaſſion had raiſed him.

But ſuch thoughts, diſagreeable as they might be, could not divert him from his purpoſe. To diſable his principal, though, as far as poſſible from carrying his reſentment any farther than words,

words, he ranſacked all his papers, and took away not only ſuch as related immediately to the private tranſactions between themſelves, but alſo thoſe of other people, with whom they had been concerned in buſineſs, in order to diſtreſs his circumſtances, and involve him in ſuch perplexities as ſhould lay him under a neceſſity of keeping fair with him. But this precaution, like many others dictated by the ſame ſpirit, occaſioned the very thing it was deſigned to prevent.

The firſt news of the affair was like a thunder-clap to the family of *the colonel*. My maſter's principal, who, though, in the courſe of law and nature, had the firſt expectations, as I have ſaid before, could not believe it to be true, ſo high was his confidence in the honeſty and attachment of my maſter. To ſatisfy, however, the importunities of his family, he came to him, and with a look of indignation at the baſeneſs of ſuch a report, rather than apprehenſion of the truth of it, "I am come (ſaid he) to tell you "a piece of news, I have juſt this moment "heard, which is, that *the colonel* has left his "whole fortune between that jade, his miſtreſs, "and you; and that you were privy to his "will, which he left in your hands "when he was going abroad. But the latter "part of the ſtory makes me eaſy about the "reſt; for, whatever his capricious temper

"might

" might lead him to do, I am convinced you " would have no hand in ſo baſe an affair, nor " even conceal his having ſuch an intention " from me a moment. I ſee you are ſhocked " at the ſcandalous imputation; but do not " think I mention it as if I believed it. I could " not do you ſo much wrong."

The firſt impreſſions of youth can never be totally effaced. Though my maſter could lay ſchemes to cheat his principal, and revile him behind his back, he had learned to look at him with an awe, when a beggar about his brother's houſe, and afterwards his ſervant, that he could never after get over, when in his preſence. This awe, added to the confuſion of conſcious guilt, made him unable to make any anſwer for ſome moments, and had wrought that change in his countenance which the other took notice of.

As ſoon as he could collect ſpirits to ſpeak, " I—I—I am obliged to every one, f—f—for " their good opinion of me;" (ſaid he, with his eyes fixed on the ground, and faltering at every word) " and hope I ſhall not f—f—f—forfeit it, " by accepting the favours of my friends."

" How! (interrupted the other eagerly.) What " can you mean by that? You ſurely do not, " cannot, avow!——"

" As for that, Sir!" (returned my maſter, plucking up a little more aſſurance) " what I " avow or diſavow is nothing to the purpoſe.

" I presume that my *most dear and worthy friend*, " *the colonel*, had a right to leave his " fortune to whom he pleased; and that who- " ever he has left it to has also a right to take " it, without being answerable to your opinion, " or that of any others, who may be prejudiced " by you; for the world will judge better, and " be satisfied that he had sufficient reasons for " what he has done."

" And so, then! it is even so! (replied the " other, after a long pause) and this is the return " I meet for raising you from wretchedness, and " admitting you to the first place in the esteem " and confidence of my heart. *Cherish a viper* " *in your bosom, and he will sting you to death.* " But it is beneath me to upbraid you! I leave " the revenge of my wrongs to your own con- " science and the justice of Heaven; and from " this moment disclaim all intercourse with " you; nor shall my lips ever more utter your " name, if I can help it. The sight of you is " a pain to me! I will send a person to take my " affairs out of your hands, and desire you will " directly provide yourself another habita- " tion! Unhappy for me was the day, when I " first gave shelter to your misery in mine."—— Saying this, he turned away, without waiting for a reply, and left the room.

This insolent behaviour (for so my master called it, as soon as the other was gone) was such

ſuch an affront to *his honour*, as in his opinion cancelled all obligations, and juſtified every thing he had done, or could do againſt him. Giving vent to his reſentment, therefore, in *a burſt of blaſphemous execrations*, he proceeded in the execution of his ſchemes, with this improvement, that, to obviate the imputations of baſe diſhoneſty and ingratitude, which his own conſcience told him his principal would publiſh to the world againſt him, he loaded him with every ſcandal that his inventive malice could ſuggeſt. But, inſtead of anſwering his purpoſe, produced the very contrary effect, as it put him under a neceſſity of laying open things to vindicate his own character, which indignant ſhame of having placed his confidence ſo unworthily would otherwiſe have made him conceal; and, in this inſtance, the world was not dazzled by ſucceſs, but directly paid his villainy with the infamy it deſerved.

As for the lady, faſhion made it neceſſary for her to put on all the mimickry of woe, in which ſhe perſiſted moſt decently for the uſual time, at the end of which ſhe found her huſband that was to be ſo ſlack in his addreſſes, that ſhe was obliged to court him, as ſuch an unſettled life was equally contrary to her intereſt and inclinations. This anſwered a double end. It gratified his vanity (for he took care to make it known) and ſeemed to obviate the credit of the contract between them,

them, ſhould it ever happen to be diſcovered. Accordingly, he kept off a little longer; and at length conſented, with the affected irreſolution of a man of the moſt delicate principles and ſenſe of honour.

As he only got a *legal* right by his marriage to what he was already in poſſeſſion of, he ſoon grew tired of the ſtate, the circumſtances of which, in his particular caſe, could not be very pleaſing to any man. However, to avoid the evils of which he was moſt immediately afraid, he went to live in the country, where he permitted his wife to ſee nobody but thoſe he approved, and in company with himſelf. Nor was he ſatisfied that his utmoſt vigilance could prove effectual, as he had had experience of the looſeneſs of her principles, and her expertneſs in all the arts of intrigue.

Their ſituation, in theſe circumſtances, may be eaſily conceived. Continual ſuſpicions, quarrels, and recriminations aggravated their mutual diſlike to the moſt rancorous hatred, and made their lives ſuch a ſcene of miſery, that they themſelves looked upon it as a commencement of Heaven's vengeance on their crimes; while all who knew them expected in horrour that they would make that vengeance ſtill more ſignally dreadful, by wreaking their hatred upon each other's lives, or their deſpair upon their own.

All

All the advantages, thus dearly earned, were an affluence diſguſting for want of power of enjoyment, except in an external pomp that only mocked the miſery within, and made the meanneſs it was deſigned to hide the more remarkable.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

CHRYSAL's *maſter deſigns to ſet up a coach; but wants a material article towards making a proper figure with it. He conſults with a* HERALD, *who gives him an elaborate diſſertation, not the moſt pleaſing to him, on* COATS OF ARMS, *and the modern methods of making them, in which he unfolds many curious myſteries, and undertakes at laſt, on proper encouragement, to make him a gentleman.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice. Converſation between his new maſter, and an* ANTIQUARIAN. *Curious arguments, by which he proves the genuineneſs and importance of certain relicks of antiquity.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

IN this age of delicacy and refinement the firſt thing thought of in genteel life is *a carriage*, which is ſo indiſpenſibly neceſſary to procure reſpect, that no eminence in ſcience, no practiſe of virtue is held in eſteem, where that is wanted. Senſible of this, my maſter reſolved to beſpeak one, the elegance and grandeur of which ſhould prove his taſte and magnificent ſpirit. One difficulty though perplexed him not a little in the deſign. This was, his want of a *coat of arms* to decorate the outſide of it, and diſplay to the world his illuſtrious deſcent.

After

After much fruitleſs meditation on ſo important a ſubject, it occurred to him, that a *herald* muſt be the proper perſon to conſult with upon the beſt means of remedying this defect. Accordingly, he enquired for the moſt eminent in that way, and, on the morning fixed for his attendance, prepared to receive him, in ſuch a manner as he imagined could not fail to inſpire him with reſpect. He was lolling at breakfaſt in an elbow-chair; dreſſed in a morning-gown of green damaſk, with a red cap on his head, the cambrick lining of which was edged with a rich lace, that turned up over it, and crimſon velvet ſlippers on his feet, one of which was extended on a cuſhion of the ſame materials, to give him the appearance of the gout, a diſorder which he looked upon as an inconteſtible proof of his being ſprung from a good family, while his lady poured out his tea, and between every diſh read a paragraph in the news-paper to entertain him.

As ſoon as the *herald* was ſhown in, my maſter caſt an eye upon his lady, and nodding majeſtically towards the door, ſhe withdrew, and left him to his buſineſs: After the uſual queſtions about the weather, and the news, my maſter at length entered upon the ſubject. "I "underſtand S—S—S— Sir," (ſaid he faltering, and almoſt bluſhing in ſpite of his aſſurance) "that

" that you have great ſkill in heraldry; and " therefore deſired to ſee you, to conſult about " my *c—c—c— coat of arms.*"

" I do preſume, Sir," (anſwered the herald with an air of importance) " to have ſome " knowledge in that myſterious and ſublime " ſcience, and hope I ſhall not wrong the cha- " racter you have received of me, in any thing " in which you are pleaſed to employ me. " Hem! ahem! Pray, Sir, what may be the " nature of your preſent commands? I ſuppoſe " you want to introduce into your own *coat*, " the *bearing* of ſome branch of your family, " which is fallen to you. There is nothing " in the world eaſier to be done, that is by " one, who, as I ſaid before, underſtands the " ſcience. It is only dividing *the field* proper- " ly, and taking care that the *blazoning* of the " different *quarterings*, of which all good fa- " milies gain many in a long courſe of deſcents, " may not be wrongly blended, as *colour upon* " *colour*, *or metal upon metal*, which you muſt " know is *falſe heraldry*; though I beg pardon, " your *blazoning* is moſt likely in *precious ſtones*, " the peculiar emblems of nobility with us. " But that makes no difference, as I will con- " vince you, if you pleaſe to let me ſee your " arms."

" Sir (replied my maſter, ſtill more con- " founded by this jargon) that is not what I

" want.

" want. I would have an entire *n—n— new*
" *coat.*"———

" O! I underſtand you, Sir! *you are the firſt*
" *of your family*; and want to *make arms* for
" yourſelf, as none of your anceſtors have left
" you any! Why, Sir, that too may be done;
" but it muſt be with judgement and care, as
" I ſaid before, for fear of interfering with the
" *arms* of any other family. But, you may
" truſt me for that, Sir! Half the *arms* you
" ſee cut ſuch a figure about the town are of
" my deviſing. *The king may make lords and*
" *knights of whom he pleaſes, but it is the herald*
" *muſt make them gentlemen*; for what is any
" man without *a coat of arms?* Pray, Sir,
" what is your name? and of what profeſſion
" was your father?"———

" Wh—wh— why do you aſk, Sir? I ſup-
" poſe there cannot be any thing material to
" your purpoſe in them?"———

" Pardon me, good Sir, they are material,
" very material. A name, eſpecially if it con-
" ſiſts of many ſyllables, often gives an excel-
" lent hint; for, as much as your modern wits
" may affect to deſpiſe the myſterious learning
" of *Rebuſes*, wiſer antiquity held it in higher
" repute, as you muſt have obſerved from the
" many illuſtrious *coats of arms* taken entirely
" from the name: and then knowledge of the
" profeſſion of a gentleman's father is abſolutely

" neceſſary

" neceſſary for many reaſons. There are pro-
" feſſions, the implements of which are never
" *dropped*, becauſe the profeſſions themſelves
" are reckoned honourable, as there alſo are
" others, nothing relating to which is ever
" *bor'n*, for the contrary reaſon. The ſon of
" a general or an admiral, for inſtance, will
" have his *arms* charged with implements of
" war; but *the ſon of a man who keeps a chandler's*
" *ſhop* will never *bear* a lump of butter, or
" bunch of candles, nor *the ſon of a tailor*, a
" pair of ſciſſars or a thimble; for theſe would
" at once betray what is deſigned to be hid;
" and therefore it is abſolutely neceſſary that I
" ſhould be informed of theſe particulars."—
" B—b—b— but, Sir, can you not ſtrike
" out ſomething entirely new, without alluding
" to any name or profeſſion at all? I am wil-
" ling to pay you well for your trouble, only
" let me have ſomething elegant and grand."
" I underſtand you, Sir. I'll engage to
" pleaſe you. I'll *quarter you the coat of a crowned*
" *head* in an inſtant, without any body's being
" able to ſay a word againſt it. Leave it to
" me; and I'll engage to pleaſe you; not the
" richeſt *contractor* or *Nabob* of them all ſhall
" make ſuch a figure."—
" And pray, Sir, what is your price, for a
" job of this kind?"—" Price, Sir? I never
" make bargains! let common mechanicks do
" that!

" that! Gentlemen always make me a preſent, " when they beſpeak their honours; and, ac- " cording to the value of that, my invention is " either high or low."

" Well, Sir, it ſhan't ſink on that account " now. Here are ten guineas for you, as an " earneſt of what I will give, if I like your " work, when it is done."——

" Sir! you may depend on having the " *higheſt arms* of any man in the kingdom. " Your generoſity ſhows that you ought to be " a gentleman; and it ſhall be my fault if I " don't make you one, in the ſight of the " world."——Saying this, he took his leave, *when I was heartily glad to go with him, being part of the price paid upon this occaſion for the making of a gentleman.*

As ſoon as my *new* maſter went home, he retired to his cloſet, and taking out the money he had juſt received, " Ha! ha! ha! no bad " price for a little *daubing!*" (ſaid he, laughing, and chinking the purſe.) " I wonder how the " fellow could be ſuch an aſs as to think that " any thing in my power to do could make him " paſs for a gentleman! But let him have his " way! his folly is my gain; and it is no " more than juſtice, that one who has cheated " the world ſo long ſhould cheat himſelf at " laſt, and ſacrifice the earnings of villainy to " vanity! But, hold! this is about the time my

" *Antiquarian* was to come. Let me ſee thoſe " *ancient manuſcripts* and *inſcriptions which I* " *had done laſt week!* Upon my life, they look " very well. The *canker* upon this copper, " and the *ſmoke* upon this parchment are as na- " tural as if they were the work of a thouſand " years; and theſe *ſcrawls* might paſs even for " the *ſpells* of the Witch of *Endor*, they have ſo " little likeneſs to any marks made to convey " thought, at this time. He is a very pretty " fellow that did them, and deſerves encou- " ragement."

Juſt as he ſaid this, the perſon he expected came, and entering without ceremony upon his buſineſs, " I called upon you, Sir (ſaid he) " to ſee thoſe things you mentioned to me. If " they are really what you deſcribe, we ſhall " not differ about the price, high as it is."

" I hope, Sir (anſwered my maſter) you " have not ſo mean an opinion of my judge- " ment, as to imagine I could ever think of " impoſing upon you. No, Sir! I know that " to be impoſſible; even if I could, be baſe " enough to attempt it; and, therefore would " not mention any thing to you, that could " admit of the leaſt doubt to a perſon of your " profound learning. As to the price, I could " have had much more ſince I ſaw you; but " I thought it but juſtice to their merit to offer " them firſt to you, as there is no other col-

" lection

" lection in the kingdom worthy of them, and
" I am above riſing in a demand I have once
" made, though infinitely ſhort of their intrin-
" ſick value, as you will be convinced, the
" moment you ſee them. Here, Sir, is the
" *manuſcript*, which I had the good fortune to
" meet with, as I was rummaging among ſome
" old records in our office, that had never been
" ſtirred ſince the reign of *Henry the Eighth*.
" The paper in which it was wrapped was ſo
" decayed, that it mouldered quite away, ſo
" immediately upon its coming into the open
" air, that I had ſcarce time to read the con-
" tents, which were *that this parchment had been*
" *found in the tomb of Thomas à Becket, upon the*
" *breaking up of his ſhrine at the Reformation*, and
" was laid up there, on account of its anti-
" quity. That it muſt have been very ancient,
" even before his time, the colour and decay of
" the parchment would ſufficiently prove, were
" there not other proofs ſtill more convincing
" to ſuch as have judgement to comprehend
" them. The ſhape of the letter ſhows its age.
" This manner of writing, as appears by com-
" paring it with other ancient manuſcripts,
" was introduced in the beginning of the ſecond
" century of the Criſtian Æra, and quite drop-
" ped by the middle of the third. Within
" that period, therefore, it muſt have been
" written. Its antiquity being thus fixed, the

" purport of it is next to be conſidered; and of " that, and its importance, there can be no juſt " room to doubt. This ſpot at the bottom of " the parchment, though ſo much defaced by " time, bears a ſtrong reſemblance to the im- " preſſion of a *mitre*, and thereby proves that " ſome biſhop was the author of what was " written over it, into which theſe four letters, " M—A—T—H, fortunately ſo very plain, " give the cleareſt light; for as they muſt " have been part of the word ARIMATHÆA, " they prove that the opinion of *Joſeph* of *Ari-* " *mathæa*'s having firſt preached the Goſpel in " *Britain* was known ſo early as in the ſe- " cond century, and ſo decide that long-con- " teſted point; as, who can be ſuch an Infidel " as to doubt a thing given thus, as I may ſay, " under the ſacred ſeal of the *mitre*, and that " ſo very near the time."

" Very true; but is it not as probable, that " the deſign of this writing was to refute that " opinion, as to confirm it?"

" My good Sir, if you allow weight to ſuch " trivial objections as this, you give up all the " knowledge of an *Antiquarian*, which never " amounts higher, than to poſſible conjecture, " without regard to probability even againſt " him; for *conjectures* ſuch as this, *founded on* " *effaced remains of antiquity, are of much greater* " *weight in the learned world, becauſe they ſhow*

" *more*

" *more learning than the plaineſt concluſions drawn*
" *from evident, and complete records, as theſe are ob-*
" *vious to any common perſon.* But, why do I
" mention theſe things to you, who underſtand
" them ſo much better than I pretend to do."

" I believe I do, Sir, know ſomething of
" thoſe matters; and was ſatisfied both of its
" antiquity and importance, at the firſt glance
" of my eye; though I ſtarted that objection
" for mere amuſement. But where is the frag-
" ment? I ſhould be glad to ſee that alſo."

" Here it is, Sir;" (anſwered my maſter, taking a bit of broken copper out of a box, in which it was carefully wrapped in cotton.) " This plate of copper was torn, in the manner
" you ſee, from the head of a ſepulchral mo-
" nument, on the top of Mount *Libanus*, by
" a perſon who had been ſent thither by a cele-
" brated Society, on purpoſe to ſeek for ſuch
" things; and at his return made me a preſent
" of it, as the moſt valuable acquiſition he had
" made, out of gratitude for my having helped
" him to the job. Obſerve this *canker*, Sir!
" Much as it has been rubbed off in the car-
" riage; the depth and colour of it ſhow, that
" it muſt have been ſome thouſands of
" years in gathering. What the occaſion of
" ſetting it up was, ſome particular circum-
" ſtances direct to a conjecture ſufficiently pro-
" bable. You ſee this *hole*, which the canker

" has eaten almoſt through the copper, with " this *ſtroke* turning up over it. This certainly " is the remains of the figure of a lion, as is " plain from theſe two *tufts* in the middle, and " at the end of the ſtroke, which muſt have " been the tail of it. Now, as a lion was the " emblem of *Judah*, it cannot be doubted but " ſome great perſonage of that tribe muſt have " been buried where this emblem was ſet up— " a circumſtance, that ſo clearly proves the an- " tiquity of *coats of arms*, that I do not know " how to think of parting with it, it affords ſuch " an illuſtration to a treatiſe I am at this time " engaged in writing on that ſublime and dif- " ficult ſubject."

" Not part with it!" (replied the *Antiquarian*, returning it carefully into the box, and then cramming the box into his boſom.) " You " muſt get it firſt, my good friend, to part " with. Ha! ha! ha! a very pretty jeſt, truely! " you offer a thing to ſale, and ſet a price upon " it, and then you cannot part with it! a very " pretty jeſt, truely! Here is your money, both " for the *manuſcript* and the *fragment*; and " when you meet with any other ſuch precious " remains of antiquity, I ſhall be obliged to " you to let me have the preference. Nobody " will give you a better price."

Saying this, he reached my maſter a bank-note, which he took with an air of diſſatis-

faction;

faction; and while he was telling out change, "You do as you pleaſe with me, Sir (ſaid he) "this time; but the next I ſhall be more upon "my guard. I am glad, however, that it "goes into ſo noble a *collection* as your's, where "it will have juſtice done to its merit."

"Aye, Sir!" (anſwered the *Antiquarian*, with a ſmile of ſelf-complacency.) "I have been at "ſome pains, and expenſe, too, to make a *col-* "*lection*; and have the ſatisfaction to think, "that, whenever I die, it will make as good a "figure in a *ſale catalogue* as that of moſt of my "contemporaries. I ſhall leave proofs behind "me, that I have not ſpent my life in vain. "What would I not give to hear the character "which an able *Auctioneer* will give of me, "upon opening the ſale! I wiſh my good "friend *Puff* may out-live me, to have the job. "There is no man ſets forth the merit of any "thing in ſuch happy terms. He has words "at will, as they ſay. What a high opinion "will he raiſe of my learning, taſte, and judge- "ment! But that's right—You ſaid you "wanted this *fragment*, for a particular occa- "ſion: I am by no means averſe to obliging "you. You are welcome to quote it, as in "my *collection*, ſuppoſe in this, or ſome ſuch "manner, "*as appears* (proving what you "have advanced before) *by a moſt valuable*, "*and rare antique fragment* (or whatever elſe

" you ſhall call it) *in the moſt curious*, or *coſtly*, or " *ineſtimable*, or *noble* (or perhaps all theſe) *col-* " *lection of my late moſt learned, and judicious,* " *and indefatigable, and munificent friend,*" or " whatever other titles of the kind your judge- " ment and regard ſhall dictate to you."

" I am much obliged to you for the favour," (returned my maſter, ſcarce able to reſtrain his laughter) " and ſhall be ſure to avail myſelf of " it, at the proper time, as alſo to do it in a " manner, which, however ſhort it may fall of " your merit, will yet teſtify my high and re- " ſpectful ſenſe of it."—Saying this, he gave him the change of his note, *among which I was*, and ſent him away happy.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

A modeſt method of ſeeking fame. CHRYSAL's *maſter confirms himſelf in his reſolution to gratify an uncommon curioſity, by a great example. The judicious and learned manner in which he claſſed and entered his new acquiſitions. Curious remark on the value of books. He goes to an auction, where he makes an extraordinary purchaſe.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of the Auctioneer. Specimen and effects of his new maſter's eloquence, learning, and judgement.*

A Man's ſpending his life and fortune, in buying up books of learning, and obſcure remains of antiquity, only to make a great ſale after his death, was a method of ſeeking fame more modeſt than I had hitherto met among mankind. As ſoon as my *new* maſter reached home, he went directly into his *Muſæum*, and taking out his rare purchaſes, ſtared at them for ſome time in a kind of ſtupid delight, till no longer able to contain it, "What an opinion "(ſaid he) will the world have of me, when all "theſe come to be ſhown for ſale? I hope my "worthy friend *Puff* will live to do me juſtice! "What if I ſhould beg of him to give me a "ſpecimen of the manner in which he will ſet "them out? He cannot refuſe me that gratifica-

" tion, in return for all the money he has taken
" from me, eſpecially as I have told him, that I
" deſign he ſhall have the job. Such a requeſt
" is not improper. It has the ſanction of one
" of the greateſt names in antiquity to ſupport
" it. *Cicero*, the great *Cicero*, deſired his friend,
" the hiſtorian, to let him know what he in-
" tended to ſay of him; and need I heſitate to
" follow his example? Whatever has the au-
" thority of antiquity muſt be right; and, there-
" fore, I will go to him directly about it.—But,
" hold! I muſt enter theſe articles in my ca-
" talogue firſt."

Then taking down an huge folio, richly bound, and inſcribed CATALOGUE, on the back and ſides, in capitals of gold, he ſat down to inſert this valuable addition to his treaſure, and opening the book with great deliberation, " What are the *heads* (ſaid he) under
" which they are to be claſſed? Let me ſee!
" *Antiques!* No! that is for my *coins*, and
" *buſts*, and *urns*. What is the next? *Ancient*
" *manuſcripts* and *fragments!* Aye! theſe are
" they. Let me conſider, now, what are the
" titles!"——Then laying the fore-finger of his right hand upon the tip of his noſe, ſupporting his chin with his thumb, ſhutting his eyes, and leaning back in his chair, on the arm of which he reſted his elbow, " How unlucky it
" was (reſumed he, after a long pauſe) that he
" did

" did not tell their names! I was aſhamed to aſk " him directly, though I did as much, if he " had minded me. But, can't I make them " out, from what he ſaid? *A very antique ma-* " *nuſcript*—No! that will not do. *Antique* " is for works of art; *ancient* is the word here.— " *A very ancient manuſcript written by Thomas à* " *Becket in the ſecond century, and found in his* " *tomb, at the Reſtoration, proving that Joſeph of* " *Arimathæa was an Engliſh biſhop.*—Yes! That " is it. And then for the *fragment—a very* " *ancient*—no, *antique*. *Antique* is the word for " *fragments*, they are made by art—*A very an-* " *tique fragment torn from a monument on Mount* " *Libanus, proving that ſome great perſon was* " *buried there; and that a lion was the arms of* " *Judah.*—Aye! theſe will do! I knew I could " make them out. This is juſt the ſubſtance " of what he ſaid, but in fewer and better " words. Titles ſhould be ſhort and pithy. " *Multum in parvo*—Much in a little compaſs. " Let me alone for hitting off a ſtriking title. " I have not been an *Antiquarian* ſo long for " nothing."—Then conning them over twice or thrice, to try how they ſounded, he entered them in his catalogue, and putting the book back into its place, ſat down to contemplate his own conſequence in the learned world.

But, ſublime as this enjoyment was, his indefatigable induſtry would not permit him to

indulge it long. "Hah! (ſaid he, ſtarting, as "upon ſudden recollection) that's right! the ſale "of thoſe *Chineſe characters*, brought over in "the laſt fleet, comes on about this very time. "It was quite out of my head; and I "would not have miſſed them on any account. "They'll make a capital article; for the *Chineſe* "taſte is coming into ſuch great *vogue*, that I "ſuppoſe we ſhall ſoon learn their language; "though I ſhould be ſorry to ſee that, too; as "it would leſſen the value of my *Chineſe* books; "for *books are now valued the more for not being underſtood*, as I know by experience, having laid "out many a pound in the purchaſe of ſuch as "I underſtand no more of, than if they were "*Chineſe*. But let thoſe who know no other uſe of "books but to read them buy only ſuch as they "can read: I *collect* mine for another purpoſe, "and a noble *collection* I will have, let it coſt "me what it will: I care not whether I die "worth a groat beſide: the fame of that is "fortune enough for me."

Purſuant to this noble reſolution he went directly to the ſale, where he was ſo charmed with the *Auctioneer's* learning and eloquence, that he out-bade every body, and carried off in triumph *the curious, the rare, the ineſtimable key into all the myſterious, the profound, the ſublime wiſdom of that prince of all Philoſophers, Legiſlators, and Hierarchs, the divine* Co—FUT—SEE, *and all his learned and*

and judicious Diſciples and Commentators, THE CHINESE CHARACTERS, in paying for which, *I changed his ſervice for that of the Auctioneer.*

My *new* maſter proceeded, for the remainder of the ſale, to diſplay his abilities in the ſame extraordinary manner; giving circumſtantial accounts of things he knew nothing of; and beſtowing the moſt extravagant praiſes for excellencies of his own invention, often inconſiſtent with each other, and with the ſubject to which they were ignorantly attributed, with a confidence that bore down doubt, and gained implicit credit with the gaping croud, in defiance to reaſon, and their very ſenſes, till he led them on by little and little to pay the price of ſuch an imaginary value. But this will be beſt explained by an inſtance that happened juſt after I came into his poſſeſſion.

The ſale of that day conſiſted *nominally* of the *collection* of a *Cheeſemonger* lately deceaſed, who had been *an eminent Antiquarian* and *Virtuoſo*. I ſay nominally; becauſe, though the whole went under his name, ſcarce the tenth part of it had ever been his, the reſt being *made up* from every quarter by my maſter. Among the *rare*, *curious*, and *coſtly* articles exhibited on this occaſion, was a veſſel of *Porcelaine*, of an uncommon ſhape, ornamented with ſeveral odd and uncouth repreſentations of animals, and ſome figures not unlike the characters of a language.

" Gentlemen,

" Gentlemen (ſaid my maſter, as ſoon as this " was produced) you here ſee one of the rareſt, " and moſt valuable remains of antiquity, ever " brought into *Europe*. This *here* ſuperb vaſe " was the identical cup out of which the ſub- " lime emperours of *China* for numberleſs ages " drank the conſecrated wine, on the day of their " coronation. It was found, gentlemen, among " the treaſures of the Great *Mogul*, by *Thomas* " *Couli Can*, when he dethroned that *there* " prince, out of the wreck of whoſe ſpoils, " when they were loſt in paſſing the river *of the* " *Indies*, it was ſaved by a *Chineſe Nabob*, from " whom it was afterwards taken, together with " his crown, by *that there heaven-born* general, " who made thoſe effeminate and daſtardly " *Indians* tremble at the name of an *Engliſhman*, " and given by him as a precious token of his " eſteem to the deceaſed, his very learned and " curious friend. This, gentlemen, is in few " words the whole, full, and true account of " this *here* ineſtimable curioſity, every word of " which can be proved by unqueſtionable au- " thority. As for the vaſe itſelf, excluſive of all " this, its own merits give it ſufficient value. " Obſerve theſe *here* figures, gentlemen; they " are *Egyptian hieroglyphicks* denoting the duties " of a ſovereign, which thoſe wiſe *Mandarines* " always take care to inſtruct their emperours " in. This *here lion*, for inſtance, ſignifies that

" he

" he muſt be courageous and valiant: this *fox*,
" that he muſt be wiſe; and ſo on. But the
" moſt extraordinary thing of all, gentlemen,
" is theſe here characters. They are a *taliſ-*
" *man*, or *charm*, invented by *Mahomet* to pro-
" tect the owner of this cup from the influence
" of evil ſpirits. I do not preſume, gentlemen,
" to ſtand up for the virtue of ſuch things. The
" notion of ſpirits, I am ſenſible, is much ex-
" ploded; and the religion of *Mahomet* cried
" down among us; but ſtill, gentlemen, with-
" out entering into theſe *here* nice points, we
" all know that he was a great man, and *lived*
" *a great while ago*, which is ſufficient to make
" any thing that was his of great value to men
" of learning, who are above prejudice in theſe
" matters. But, beſide all this, theſe here cha-
" racters are of the greateſt importance, on
" another account; as they prove beyond diſ-
" pute, that *the true method of writing the learned*
" *languages was without accents*, not one appear-
" ing, as you ſee, gentlemen, in this moſt ori-
" ginal and authentick relick of ancient learn-
" ing, and ſo put an end to that *there* contro-
" verſy, that has ſo long puzzled the world. It
" were preſumption in me, gentlemen, to at-
" tempt putting a value on a thing that is inva-
" luable. I will, therefore, ſet it up at what
" you pleaſe, as you are the beſt judges. This
" only I will make bold to ſay, that the beſt

" judge of all will have it, as he will give moſt " for it; for too much it is impoſſible to give."

So juſt an account, and ſuch judicious praiſe, could not fail of effect. The *Virtuoſi* round him, ſatisfied that what he ſaid muſt be true, becauſe ſpoken with confidence, and above their comprehenſion, vied with each other for the poſſeſſion of ſo ineſtimable a treaſure, till they *raiſed* it to an height, at which they themſelves were ſurpriſed, as ſoon as the ſpirit of *bidding* began to cool, and they had time to reflect.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

An unſavoury accident ſtops him ſhort in his harangue. He turns off the jeſt, with another, and accounts learnedly for what has happened. The real cauſe, and conſequence of that accident. Reflexions on auctioneering, and the cauſes of its ſucceſs.

THIS was the time for which he always reſerved the higheſt flights of his eloquence, to raiſe that ſpirit again. Reſuming, therefore, his harangue, "You pauſe, gentlemen "(ſaid he) only to conſider how much farther you "may *riſe* with ſafety; for it is impoſſible that "perſons of your profound taſte and judgement "ſhould diſgrace them ſo much, as to let ſuch "a jewel *go* for ſo mere a trifle. Do not take "my word, gentlemen, for its value. I may "be miſtaken, but you cannot. Examine it, "therefore, yourſelves. Obſerve the beauty of "theſe here *unknown* figures! *read* theſe *unin-* "*telligible* characters; and ſmell the aromatick "odour which the vaſe ſtill retains, and ever "will retain, from the quinteſſences of all the "ſpices of the *Indies*, which uſed to be mixed "with the conſecrated wine. The perfume "is almoſt enough to revive the dead."

Saying

Saying this, he went to ſmell it himſelf, to lead the way to the reſt, and putting the mouth of it to his noſe, without taking off the cover, that the fragrance ſhould not evaporate, as he raiſed his hand, a ſtream, that emitted a ſavour far from aromatick, guſhed out into his face, andfilled his mouth, as well as noſe, with ſomething more ſubſtantial than perfume.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe his ſituation, at ſuch a diſgraceful accident. Surpriſe, ſhame, and loathing aggravated each other, and threw him into ſuch confuſion, as once in his life deprived him of utterance for ſome moments. As ſoon as he had emptied his mouth, and wiped his face, "Villain, (ſputtered he, to his ſervant) how has this happenned? Whom have you let play me this baſe, malicious, low-lived trick?"

"S—S—Sir," (anſwered the fellow, as well as his ſtruggle to ſuppreſs his laughter permitted him to ſpeak) "I know nothing of the matter, I never left any one a moment alone among the things, but them there ladies, who I told you ſent me out for a glaſs of *Ratafia*, the other morning, and how could I have ſuſpected their doing ſuch a thing?"

"*Ratafia!*" (replied my maſter, who had by this time recovered his aſſurance, and knew the beſt way to turn off one jeſt is by another) "*Gin*, you ſhould ſay; for, if I can judge by

"taſte

" taſte and ſmell, that is their liquor. I ſup-
" poſe they did it on purpoſe to revenge their
" ſex upon *Mahomet*, for taking away their
" ſouls (I wiſh he had alſo taken away the
" filthineſs of their diſpoſitions!) by defiling
" ſo celebrated a monument of his learning and
" ſkill, in this naſty manner, Ha! ha! ha!"

The oddity of ſuch a thought naturally made the company join in his laugh; but could not ſo far wipe off the diſgrace which the defiled vaſe had ſuffered, as to make any more be offered for it, ſo that it was forced to be *knocked down* to the laſt *bidder*, at not much more than if it had been made of gold, at which the purchaſer and my maſter were equally mortified, though for different and with very unequal reaſons. As for the cauſe of this misfortune, it was really what the ſervant ſaid. One of the ladies who came to view the curioſities having certain preſſing occaſions, feigned a pretenſe to ſend him out; and in the mean time made ſuch uſe of this vaſe, being the firſt conveniency that came to her hand, as over-powered the ſcent of ſome ſpices, which had been put into it for the purpoſe.

It was fortunate for my maſter, that this was the laſt article in the ſale of that day, as a ſpirit of ridicule could not be favourable to his buſineſs. As ſoon as the company were gone, he ſettled his accounts, and ſumming up the profits,

profits, "Why this is pretty well!" (ſaid he rubbing his hands, and ſhrugging up his ſhoulders) "this does pretty well! Though, if that damn'd "accident had not happened (turning up his "noſe, and ſpitting with loathing) it would "have been much better. The fools were in "the humour, and wanted only to be kept up. "However, I have not much right to complain "upon the whole. That there *Jordan* coſt "me five ſhillings, and I have ſold it for fifty "pounds. Much good may the judicious buyer "make of his bargain. This is the happineſs "of a man's having his tongue *well hung*. A "mealy mouth will never do for my buſineſs; "which after all is the beſt going. I might "have ſtood freezing behind a counter this "month, and not make half this much. In "the way of *fair trade*, as it is called, people "have their ſenſes about them, and ſtand to "examine before they buy, but any trumpery "will go off in this way."

I have obſerved your aſtoniſhment at the eaſineſs with which my maſter ſucceeded in ſuch groſs impoſition; but the reaſon of it is obvious. All mankind have an ambition of diſtinguiſhing themſelves, one way or another; and generally chooſe that, in which they have the leaſt qualifications to entitle them to ſucceſs, in order to hide their own deficiency. The coward, for inſtance, affects valour; the blockhead knowledge;

ledge; and the illiterate tradeſman, who has made a fortune by plodding on in ſome illiberal buſineſs, taſte and judgement in the abſtruſeſt purſuits of learned curioſity, in which, as there is no fixed rule to judge by, caprice takes the direction, and opens an ample field for impoſition.

As to the buſineſs of *auctioneering* in general, it owes the greater part of that ſucceſs, with which my maſter was ſo pleaſed, to another cauſe—The deſire of *buying bargains*, which governs every one who buys any thing, makes people croud to thoſe places, where things are to be ſold, not as in the regular courſe of trade, for what they appear to be worth, but for the moſt that can be got for them; and there emulation, dependence on each other's judgement, "(*thoſe people know what they are doing, and would "not bid ſo much, if it was not worth more*") and the *oratory* of the auctioneer lead them by inſenſible advances, as their ſpirits riſe, to give prices, which they never meant to give, when they began to *bid*. That great bargains are often got at ſuch places is true, but that is chiefly in a particular branch of the buſineſs, the myſtery of which will be explained to you.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's *master is visited by a* CONNOISSEUR, *to whom he gives a short receipt how to make his pictures sell, and makes some striking remarks, on the disregard people show for their families, which send his visitor away in a huff.*

MY master was interrupted in his pleasing meditations, by the enterance of a gentleman, the sight of whom promised him the greater pleasure of carrying the subject of them into execution. After some judicious remarks on the taste of the town, and the present state of *virtu*, in the course of which each liberally complimented the other, "Pray, Sir (said the "gentleman) how do pictures sell, this season?"

"Never better, Sir (answered my master.) "Pictures are every body's money, now. A "*good master* brings any thing; and what is "more, I am convinced they will rise still higher, so that buyers have no time to lose. I "have a sale next week, when you will see "such prizes as will astonish you. There "are some things there, that I know you will "have, let them cost what they will, they suit "your fine collection so exactly."

"Why as to that (replied the gentleman) "my

" my mind is a good deal changed. I have " taken it into my head lately to part with my " pictures, and have therefore called upon you, " to desire that you will come in the morning, " and let me know what you think they are " worth."——

" Worth, Sir! they are a worth a great deal " of money; which there is not the least dan- " ger but they will bring, if they are managed " properly. There is more, Sir, in the manage- " ment of a sale, much more than most people " dream of, I assure you."——

" I am sensible of that, Sir; and also of your " abilities in such management, which you will " have the best encouragement to exert on this " occasion, as I propose selling the whole to " you together, if we can agree."—

This turn came so unexpected that it struck my master quite down in the mouth, as he was sensible that he had over-shot himself, and spoiled his market by saying so much. " It is very " unlucky, Sir," (answered he, changing his note directly) " that I did not know your inten- " tion sooner. I could then have divided them " properly among the several sales of the season; " but it is now quite too late; this here one next " week is the last; and the catalogues for that " are all made out, and dispersed, so that there " is no possibility of *slipping in* a single article. " Besides, the buyers have laid out all their " money."——

" Slipping

"Slipping in, Sir! I do not underſtand you. "Do not you think my pictures are ſufficient, "both in number and value, to make a ſale by "themſelves? I am ſure, I have more than "once known you make noiſe enough about "*collections* in no reſpect equal to mine. There "muſt be ſome myſtery in this, which I cannot "comprehend."

"Very true, Sir! there are myſteries, as "you obſerve, in all buſineſſes; and perhaps "in none more than our's."——

"I am not enquiring into your myſteries. "All I deſire to know is, why, after juſt tel- "ling me that pictures never bore ſo high a "price as at this time, and that mine could "not fail of bringing a great deal of money, "you ſhould ſo ſoon change your opinion."—

"Pardon me, Sir, I have not changed my "opinion in the leaſt; and ſhall be very proud "to ſerve you to the beſt of my abilities, in the "way of a ſale; but there is a material reaſon, "why I muſt beg to be excuſed in buying them, "to ſtand the hazard of it myſelf."——

"I ſhould be glad to know what that reaſon "can be, for I muſt own I cannot conceive it."

"Why, Sir, it is a thing to be ſure that may "ſeem odd to you; but experience has taught "us the truth of it. In ſhort, Sir, it is your "being alive."———

"How! my being alive! What difference can "my

" my life or death make in the value of my " pictures?"——

" A very great one, Sir, I aſſure you. In " all the courſe of my buſineſs, I never knew " one inſtance of a ſale's going *off* well, where " the owner was living. People conclude that " a perſon parts with pictures either through " diſlike, or neceſſity. The former, you know, " depreciates them at once; nor does the other " much leſs; as people of faſhion deſpiſe a man, " and every thing belonging to him, the mo- " ment it is known that he is in diſtreſs. Be- " ſides, an *Auctioneer*'s tongue is *tied up* from " ſaying any thing of a perſon's taſte, and " judgement, and all that, while he is living, " it ſounds ſo fulſome; and you are ſenſible that " a good character of the *collector* often goes a " great way in helping off a *collection*."

" The beſt thing, then, for a man to do on " ſuch an occaſion, I preſume, would be to ſhoot " himſelf through the head! Heh?"

" Ha! ha! ha! You are pleaſed to jeſt, " Sir; but to be ſure it would be of great ad- " vantage. Curioſity brings all the world upon " thoſe occaſions, and then a man has an op- " portunity of ſaying ſo many things, as *that* " *the deceaſed would not take ten times ſo much,* " *if he were living*; or, *that the high price he* " *gave for it cauſed the diſtreſs that made him kill* " *himſelf*; or a thouſand other ſtriking things

" the kind. *I never have ſo much pleaſure as upon* " *thoſe occaſions*, they give a man ſuch room to " ſhow himſelf. Indeed, if gentlemen con- " ſidered the thing in time, more of them would " take this method of delivering themſelves and " their families both from diſtreſs, and not de- " fer it till all his gone, and the ſurvivors can " make nothing by their death; but few people " take any care for their families now o' days. " It is a bold puſh, to be ſure; though not ſo " bad as *a man's ſhooting himſelf to win a wager*, " neither. I ſhould beg your pardon, Sir, for " ſpeaking ſo freely, but as I know it is not " your caſe, you cannot take offenſe; though, " even if I thought it was, I would not pre- " ſume to recommend ſuch a thing, for the " world. Every body is to judge for himſelf. " I only give you my opinion what effect it " would have."

" I underſtand you very well, Sir," (an- ſwered the gentlemen, who had much diffi- culty to hear him out) " and in return for your " opinion will give you my advice, which is, " to conſider better whom you ſpeak to in this " inſolent manner another time, for fear of re- " ceiving ſuch chaſtiſement, as contempt alone " prevents my giving you this moment."—On ſaying which words he turned about, and left the room.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL's maſter receives an agreeable ſummons. His encomiums on the generoſity of merchants, and account of the way many of them acquire reputation for taſte and judgement. He meets the merchant, who conſults him on a different branch of his buſineſs from that which he expected. CHRYSAL's maſter, in order to encourage his cuſtomer, gives a large account of his own abilities, and opens ſome curious ſecrets in his buſineſs. A bargain is ſtruck, to the mutual ſatisfaction of both parties; and CHRYSAL changes his ſervice for that of the merchant.

WELL as my maſter was accuſtomed to rebukes, there was ſomething in the nature of this which diſconcerted him ſo much, that he had not power to make the gentleman any reply. But he was ſoon relieved from the trepidation into which it threw him, by a meſſage from an eminent merchant, to meet him directly at a neighbouring tavern. "Aye (ſaid "he, adjuſting his wig at the glaſs, and putting "on his cloak) this is the thing! There is ſome "difference between treating with a good ſubſtantial citizen, who will mind what a man "ſays, and your people of faſhion, who fly "into a rage, forſooth, if they can't have their

" own way, in every thing. No people part " with their money ſo freely as merchants. " They don't ſtand higgling, and criticizing " like the others. All they require is, to be " aſked a good price, and then they think a " thing muſt be good of courſe. Many a time " have I got five times more from a merchant, " than I dared to have aſked from a duke. I " ſuppoſe he wants to ſhow his taſte next week " at the ſale; and has ſent for me, to tell him " which are the beſt pieces, and how much he " may bid for them. He is not the firſt citizen, " whom my inſtructions have made paſs for a " man of taſte and judgement. I love ſuch " pupils, they pay ſo well for their learning; " and that more ways than one; for they buy " what no body elſe would bid for; *it is only* " *ſlipping a puffer or two of quality* at them, " *enough of whom come ſharking to every ſale for* " *that purpoſe only*, and they may be raiſed to " any price. No people part with their money " like merchants."

When he came to the tavern, he found the merchant waiting for him. After the compliments common upon ſuch occaſions were politely interchanged, " I deſired to ſee you (ſaid " the merchant, proceeding to buſineſs, though " not without evident confuſion) on an affair, " that will convince you of my confidence in " your abilities and honour. Trade, as you " know,

" know, has been ſo dead for ſome time paſt, " that there is no getting in a penny of money, " without tearing people to pieces. Now, as I " had rather ſuffer ſomething myſelf, than op- " preſs any honeſt man, till he can bring his " affairs about, I ſhould be glad to diſpoſe of " ſome parcels of goods, even under their va- " lue, to raiſe money for preſent occaſions, that " is, provided it can be done in ſuch a manner, " as not to be known, as ſuch a thing might in- " jure a man's credit."

" Dear Sir," (anſwered my maſter, whoſe heart leaped with joy, at the mention of ſuch an affair) " never fear that; I'll engage to " manage it ſo, that if every one who knows " you were to watch, they'd never even ſuſpect " the leaſt of the matter. There is nothing " eaſier, nor more common in the way of " buſineſs; and it luckily happens, that I have " the fineſt opportunity, at this very time, that " ever I had in my life. I have a large ſale " under a commiſſion, the very week after next, " into which I can *hedge* a thouſand or two, " with the greateſt eaſe and ſafety. Aſſignees " never take notice of ſuch things. We under- " ſtand one another better than that. Many a " worthy man have I enabled to hold his head " above water, for years, by this method. To " be ſure, it muſt have an end ſome time; but " then a man ſtands in fortune's way for a

" lucky hit, you know; and not only that,
" but alſo makes ſure of ſo much good living,
" in the mean time, and can be no worſe at
" the laſt: and, then when all comes to all, and
" there muſt be a *blow-up*, it gives him an op-
" portunity of ſecuring ſomething againſt a
" rainy day, as the ſaying is. As for its being
" diſcovered, there are ways enough to prevent
" that. *It is but entering them as ſold, and I'll*
" *find a buyer, that ſhall never be heard more of.*
" Lord, Sir, if it was not for things of this
" kind, our buſineſs would be nothing to what
" it is. Half the ſales you ſee every day in the
" papers are made up in this manner."

" Well, Sir," (replied the merchant, who had liſtened to him with attention, and ſeemed greatly affected at ſome part of what he ſaid) " I preſume you underſtand your buſineſs, and, " as I have no doubt of your honour, I ſhall " leave the whole entirely to your management. " Here is an account of the particulars which " I want to diſpoſe of at this time. They are " in a private warehouſe, whither I have had " them conveyed, to be ready for the purpoſe, " of which this is the key; and here is a bill " of ſale, which I will execute directly, as I " have an occaſion for two thouſand pounds " this very evening. You ſee there is value, " more than ſufficient for double that ſum, as " you will be a better judge when you ſee the

" goods,

" goods, but the reſt can *ſtand forward* till " they are diſpoſed of, and the account made " up."——

" Really, Sir, I ſhould be extremely glad to " ſerve you, but I fear, I have not ſo much caſh " by me, However, if you pleaſe, I'll go with " you, and look at the goods; and then I'll ſtep " home, and try what I can do."

Accordingly, away they went together to the warehouſe; where my maſter being ſatisfied with the value of the goods, left the merchant, and hied him home directly with a joyful heart for the money.

" So! (ſaid he, to himſelf, as he went along) " I thought what things would come to, in the " end! His coach, and country-houſe! his " wife's routes; and his own kept miſtreſs have " made quick work with him. I believe ſuch " men muſt imagine the reſt of the world to be " blind, or they would never go on at ſuch a " rate. I ſuppoſe he's preparing for a place in " the *Gazette* to-morrow, or next day. But " that is no affair of mine. I'll take care to " make a ſafe bargain for myſelf; and let him " look to the reſt. *I am not to ſwear for him.* " Of all the buſineſs in our way, I like this " the beſt. A man can make up what account " he pleaſes, without danger of its being diſ- " puted with him. All here is ſnug and ſecure. " If I could but get jobs enough of this kind,

" I'd let who would chaffer for *toys* and *daub-*
" *ings* with people of quality, who often *out-*
" *ſharp* us, in ſpite of all our experience."

By this time he reached home, where he ſoon made up the money, with the help of that and the former day's ſale, without heſitating a moment at its not being his own, and taking with him proper perſons to *atteſt* his bargain, and *new locks* to make ſure of it, returned to the merchant, with whom he ſoon concluded every thing, without ſcruple or delay on either ſide, and then paying him on the ſpot, in bank-notes and caſh *(among the latter of which I was)* ſent him away, as well ſatisfied, as he himſelf ſtaid behind.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

Motive of CHRYSAL's *new maſter for making ſuch a bargain, with the many and great advantages a merchant may make of being in the houſe. A ſhort ſketch of an election. The curious methods which* CHRYSAL's *maſter took, to evade the laws againſt bribery. He takes offenſe at the unreaſonable preſumption of his conſtituents, and reſolves to make the moſt of the bargain he has bought from them, which by a ſingular piece of management he propoſes to make cheaper than they think:* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of the idol of an inn. The conſequences of electioneering. Some account of* CHRYSAL's *new miſtreſs. He quits her ſervice for a curious purpoſe. An expedient to prevent the ſale of poiſon for mind and body.* CHRYSAL *again changes his ſervice.*

WHEN a man has fixed his mind upon gaining a particular end, he ſlights any inconveniencies which may attend the means. Though my *new* maſter was ſenſible of the loſs he muſt ſuffer by his bargain, the proſpect of accompliſhing the purpoſe for which he made it prevented its giving him any concern.

As ſoon as he got home, he gave orders to have his *equipage* made ready for a journey into the country, early next morning, and then re-

tiring into his cloſet, for a few moments, before he went to bed, "At length" (ſaid he, with a look of ſelf-congratulation) "I ſhall compaſs, "what I have ſo long ſet my heart upon. "What an advantage it is for a merchant to be "in the Houſe! I can laugh at *bailiffs* and "*bankruptcies* for five years at leaſt; and in the "mean time I ſhall have a thouſand opportu- "nities of making my fortune, by puſhing "boldly *in the alley*, now that all fears of the "immediate conſequences are over, or getting "beneficial *contracts* with the government, or "at leaſt ſome genteel, and profitable employ- "ment under it. A merchant may make many "advantages of being in the Houſe! Confound "that prating fellow! I was once afraid that he "*ſmoaked* my deſign, he came ſo near ſome un- "lucky circumſtances; but it was above his "*cut*. All his ſchemes are common, and "low-liv'd. This of mine is a maſter-ſtroke. "It is *playing deep*, to be ſure! Fifteen hundred "for my ſeat; and what with other expences, "and the loſs upon this night's work, as much "more. It is playing damn'd deep. But it "is too late to think of that now. I have "*ſported* many a thouſand upon a worſe chance "in my time. At any rate, I can laugh at "*bailiffs* and *bankruptcies*, for five years at leaſt. "What an advantage it is to a merchant to be "in the Houſe!"

Saying

Saying this, he went to bed, where the advantages of being in the Houſe ſtill ran ſo ſtrongly in his head, that he dreamed of nothing all night, but *bullying creditors*, and *cringing to miniſters*; doing *jobs*, and getting *contracts*, *places*, and *penſions*.

In purſuance of his ſcheme, he ſet out next morning, with a ſplendid retinue, for the borough he had in view, where he managed matters with ſuch judgement and generoſity, keeping the whole town drunk from the moment he arrived, *according to the policy which permits a candidate to deprive his electors of their ſenſes, in order to enable them to judge the better of his legiſlative abilities*, that he was elected in preference to a gentleman, the munificence of whoſe family had for many generations been the chief ſupport of the place, and who himſelf ſpent his ample fortune in hoſpitality and beneficence in it, but diſdained to buy the votes of a venal crew, on this occaſion.

As ſuch a competitor naturally had every man of worth and honour in his intereſt, it had been neceſſary for my maſter to proceed with the utmoſt care and circumſpection. Accordingly, inſtead of *directly giving* his voters money, he *lent* them the prices ſtipulated, on the *ſecurity* of their *notes of hand*, payable in a certain time—an expedient, in which he had a further view, than barely evading the laws againſt ſuch practices.

Every thing being concluded, he was preparing to depart in triumph, when his *conſtituents* waited upon him in form, with certain *inſtructions*, for executing the *truſt* they had *thus repoſed* in him. Though he looked upon this as ſuch a bare-faced piece of inſolence, that he ſcarce knew how to bear it, yet, as he had not yet taken his ſeat, he received their *commands* with the politeſt *humility*, and promiſed the moſt faithful *obedience* to them. But they were no ſooner out of his ſight, than he changed his note. "Impudent, unreaſonable ſcoundrels!" (ſaid he to himſelf, giving vent to his indignation, as he walked back and forward in the room) "to "talk of having repoſed your truſt in me, and "pretend to give me inſtructions! I have *bought* "*you*; and I will *ſell* you to the beſt bidder, if "he were the *devil*; and a bad bargain he will "have of you, if he buys you as dear as I have. "Though I have a ſtroke in my head, to bring "myſelf home, that you little think of. Thoſe "notes of hand, which you thought I took "only to evade the law, ſhall be paid to the laſt "farthing, if I am not *choſen* for nothing, next "election. You ſhall find you have no fool "to deal with."

Juſt as he ſaid this, he received notice that his coach was ready, and the landlord's daughter coming to wiſh him a good journey, he ſaluted her politely, and ſlipping a couple of gui-

neas

neas *(one of which I was)* into her hand, to buy a ribbon, left the houſe like a man of honour.

I have not entered particularly into the circumſtances of electioneering. They are too groſs to give pleaſure; and too well known to require repetition even to you. The effects, I mean immediately in the place, were ſuch as reaſon may ſuggeſt to you. The electors, inſtead of making any advantage of the price for which they thus had literally ſold their conſciences, liberties, and properties, continued to wallow in drunkenneſs, till every penny of it was ſpent, after which it was ſo long before they could ſettle rightly to work again, that it required a year's hard labour and ſtarving to repair what they ſuffered by this *bout* of exceſs and idleneſs.

My *new* miſtreſs was what is not unjuſtly called *the idol of an inn*. Endowed by nature with *prettineſs* enough to entitle her to flattery, and ſufficient *pertneſs* to make her a coquette, on her return from a *boarding-ſchool*, where her natural talents were ſo well improved by education, that ſhe was thought fit to try her fortune in the world, ſhe took her place in the *bar*, and flirted away with every gentleman that came to the houſe, in hopes of taking in ſome one of the number for marriage, as others in her way had done.

The

The firſt paſſion of the female heart is for *finery*, to the gratification of which girls ſeldom fail to apply all the money in their power. But though my miſtreſs was very far from being inſenſible to this paſſion, another ſcarce leſs powerful with the ſex took place of it at this time, which was curioſity.

A young officer, who had lately been quartered in the houſe, and made warm addreſſes to her, had ſaid ſo many fine things in praiſe of a certain book, called *Memoirs of a Lady of Pleaſure*, that ſhe reſolved to ſee it, and for that purpoſe applied at a *circulating library* in the town, the keeper of which told her, it was ſo *ſcarce* and *valuable* a book that he could not poſſible procure it for her, under a guinea.

High as this price was, ſhe would have found means to raiſe it, ſo ſtrong was her curioſity, had not the hurry of the *election*, which juſt then came on, taken up all her time. But every obſtacle was now removed, and the very evening I came into her poſſeſſion, ſhe muffled herſelf up in one of the maid's cloaks, and went for it as ſoon as it was dark, *when I was the purchaſe of this extraordinary bargain.*

I ſee you are ſhocked at the diſhoneſty and wickedneſs of my *new* maſter for hiring out at ſuch a price, or indeed at any price at all, a book, whoſe obvious deſign (and which it is too well calculated to accompliſh) is to ſupplant

every principle of virtue in the youthful mind. But the blame reſts not ſolely upon him. The excuſe, which the poet puts into the mouth of the apothecary for ſelling poiſon, that, "*his poverty, but not his will conſented,*" may with equal juſtice be alledged in palliation of a poor bookſeller's vending impious or immoral books, the poiſon of the mind.

For this reaſon, as no penalty, however ſevere, may be ſufficient to combat that neceſſity, the moſt effectual way to prevent the vending of *either poiſon* would be abſolutely to prohibit all thoſe, whoſe poverty might ſubject them to ſuch temptation, from trading in *books* or *drugs* of any kind; as it is moſt certain, that if there were neither *poor apothecaries, nor poor bookſellers,* the ſale of both vicious books, and noxious drugs, would be much leſs extenſive than it is, if it could not be totally ſuppreſſed; there being very few of the human ſpecies ſo entirely given up to a reprobate ſenſe, as to murther either the ſoul or body of a fellow creature, merely for the pleaſure of doing it.

It may be judged that I did not remain long in the ſervice of this maſter. The next morning after I came into his poſſeſſion, he came to *London*, where he laid out all

all the money he had in the purchaſe of a parcel of ſuch books as he thought moſt likely to ſuit the taſte of his cuſtomers, without regard either to virtue or religion, *on which occaſion I changed his ſervice for that of his bookſeller.*

CHAP.

CHAP. XX.

Account of CHRYSAL's *new maſter, his heroick ſpirit, and reſolution to puſh for a penſion or a pillory. Meeting between him and a poet, who turns the tables upon him. A curious method of forming a judgement of a work of genius.* CHRYSAL's *maſter is beaten out of all his art, and for once bought a book by quality, not quantity. The value of an authour's name.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

MY *new* maſter was one of thoſe aſpiring geniuſes whom deſperate circumſtances drive to puſh at every thing, and court conſequences, the bare apprehenſion of which terrifies men, who have ſome character and fortune to loſe, out of their ſenſes. He was that evening to meet at a tavern an authour, the boldneſs and beauty of whoſe writings had for ſome time engaged the publick attention in a particular manner, and made his numerous admirers tremble for his ſafety.

As he happened to out-ſtay his time, my maſter's importance took offenſe at a freedom, which he thought ſo much out of character: "This is very pretty, truely!" (ſaid he, walking back and forward in a chafe) "that I "ſhould wait an hour for an authour. It was "his

" his buſineſs to have been here firſt, and " waited for me; but he is ſo puffed up of late, " that he has quite forgot himſelf. *Bookſellers* " *ſeldom meet with ſuch inſolence from authours.* " I ſhould ſerve him right, to go away and diſ- " appoint him. But would not that diſappoint " myſelf more! He is come into ſuch vogue " lately, that the beſt man in the trade would " be glad to get him. Well! if he does not " do what I want, I know not who can! " Fools may be frighted at the thoughts of a " *cart's-tail*, or a *pillory*, I know better things: " Where they come in a popular cauſe, no- " thing ſets a man's name up to ſuch advan- " tage; and that is the firſt ſtep toward making " a fortune; as for the danger, it is only a " mere bug-bear, while the mob is on my ſide. " And, therefore, I will go on without fear, if " I am not bought off. A *penſion* or a *pillory* " is the word."

Theſe heroick meditations were interrupted by the enterance of the authour, who throwing himſelf careleſsly into a chair, " I believe I " have made you wait (ſaid he) but I could " not help it. I was obliged to ſtay to kick a " puppy of a printer, who had been impertı- " nent, as I am to meet company directly, ſo " let me hear what you have to ſay."

" I thought, Sir," (anſwered my maſter, with an air of offended importance) " you had " appointed

" appointed me to meet you here on buſineſs,
" and buſineſs, you know, cannot be hurried
" over ſo ſoon."——

" Don't mention buſineſs to me! I hate the
" very name of it; and as to any that can poſ-
" ſibly be between you and me, it may be done
" in five minutes, as well as five years, ſo
" ſpeak directly, and without further preamble,
" for all your fineſſes could have no effect upon
" me, even if I would ſubmit to let you try
" them."——

" Fineſſes, Sir! I don't know what you
" mean! I defy the world to charge me with
" having ever been guilty of any. The bu-
" ſineſs I deſired to meet you upon, was about
" *a poem*, I was informed you had ready for
" the preſs, and which I ſhould be glad to
" treat with you for."——

" Well, Sir! and what will you give me for
" it? Be quick; for I cannot wait to make
" many words."——

" What! before I have ſeen it! It is im-
" poſſible for me to ſay, till I have looked it
" over, and can judge what it is, and *how much*
" *it will make!*"

" As to your judging *what it is*, that muſt de-
" pend upon inſpiration, which I imagine you
" will ſcarcely make pretence to, till you turn
" *Methodiſt* at leaſt; but for what it will make,
" here it is; and you may judge of that,

" while

" while I go down ſtairs for a few minutes." Saying which he gave him a handful of looſe papers, and left the room.

The firſt thing my maſter did, when left thus to form his judgement of a work of genius, was to *number* the pages, and *then the lines in a page or two*, by the time he had done which the authour returned, and taking the papers out of his hand, " Well, Sir (ſaid he) and what " is the reſult of your judgement?"——

" Why really, Sir," (anſwered my maſter, after ſome pauſe) " I hardly know what to ſay. " I have *caſt off the copy*, and do not think it " will *make more than a ſhilling*, however pom- " pouſly printed."——

" What you think it will make is not the " matter, but what you will give me for it. " I ſell my work by the *quality*, not the *quan-* " *tity*."——

" I do not doubt the quality of them in the " leaſt; but conſidering how much the trade is " over-ſtocked at preſent, and what a *mere drug* " poetry has long been, I am a good deal at a " loſs what to offer, as I ſhould be unwilling " to give you or any gentleman offenſe, by " ſeeming to undervalue your works. What " do you think of five guineas; I do not ima- " gine that more can be given for ſo little; nor " indeed ſhould I be fond of giving even that,

" but

" but in compliment to you. I have had full " twice as much for two, many a time."——

" Much good may your bargain do you, Sir; but " I will not take leſs than fifty for mine in com- " pliment to you, or any bookſeller alive; and ſo " Sir, I deſire to know without more words (for I " told you before that your eloquence would be " thrown away upon me!) whether you will " give that; as I am in haſte to go to company, " much more agreeable to me than your's.—

" What, Sir! fifty guineas for ſcarce five " hundred lines! Such a thing was never heard " of in the trade."——

" Confound your trade, and you together! " Here, waiter! what is to pay?"——

" But, dear Sir! why will you be in ſuch a " hurry? Can you not give yourſelf and me " time to conſider a little? Perhaps we might " come nearer to each other!" ——

" I have told you before, and I repeat it " again, that I will have ſo much; and that " without more words."——

" You are very peremptory, Sir; but *you* " *know your own value*; and therefore, in hopes " you will let me have more for my money " next time, I will venture to give you your " price now; though really, if it was not for " your *name*, I could not poſſibly do it; but " to be ſure *that is worth a ſhilling extraordinary* " *I own.*"

" Which

"Which is twelvepence more than your's "ever will be, unleſs to the *Ordinary of New-* "*gate.* But, come! give me the money! I "want to go to my company."——

"Well, Sir! this is a haſty bargain; but "I take it upon your word; and don't doubt "but there is merit in it, to anſwer ſuch a price. "Satire, Sir! keen ſatire, and ſo plain that "*he who runs may read*, as the ſaying is, is the "thing now o' days. Where there is any "doubt or difficulty in the application it takes "off the pleaſure from the generality of "readers, who will ſcarce be ſatisfied with "leſs than the very name. That, Sir, is "your great merit. Satire muſt be perſonal, "or it will never do."——

"Perſonal! that mine never ſhall be. *Vices*, "not *Perſons*, are the objects of my ſatire, "though were I find the former, I never "ſpare the latter, be the rank and character in "life what it will."

My maſter had by this time counted out his money *(among which I was)* which the author took without telling over, and then went to his company, leaving the bookſeller ſcarcely more pleaſed with his bargain, than mortified at the cavalier treatment he had met in making it.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

Some account of the company to which CHRYSAL'S *new maſter went. His behaviour to a young female, who accoſted him in his way home. He takes her to a tavern for an uncommon purpoſe, where he treats her uncommonly, and goes home with her, from as uncommon a motive. Account of what he ſaw in her habitation, with the manner in which he behaved there. He takes another lodging for the whole family, where he leaves them abruptly, to ſave himſelf and them trouble.*

THE company to which my *new* maſter was in ſuch haſte to go, conſiſted of a few perſons, whom a ſimilarity of temper had linked in the cloſeſt intimacy. With theſe, he ſpent the remainder of the evening, in a manner which few would diſlike, though fewer ſtill could approve it; the ſpirited wit and livelineſs of their converſation gilding the groſſeſt debaucheries; at the ſame time, that the rectitude and ſublimity of their ſentiments, whenever their hearts could find opportunity to ſpeak, made the vices of their practice ſtill more horrible by the contraſt.

They *broke* not up, as it may be imagined, till nature ſunk under their exceſſes, when my maſter

maſter, as he ſtaggered home, was accoſted by a female, who had ſomething in her air and manner ſo different from thoſe *out-caſts* of humanity, who offer themſelves to caſual proſtitution in the ſtreets, that his curioſity was ſtruck, and he ſtopped to take more particular notice of her. She appeared to be about fifteen. Her figure was elegant; and her features regular; but want had ſicklied over their beauty; and all the horrours of deſpair gloomed through the languid ſmile ſhe forced, when ſhe addreſſed him.

The ſigh of diſtreſs, which never ſtruck his ear without affecting his heart, came with double force from ſuch an object. He viewed her with ſilent compaſſion for ſome moments; and reaching her a piece of gold, bade her go home, and ſhelter herſelf from the inclemencies of the night, at ſo late an hour. Her ſurpriſe and joy at ſuch unexpected charity overpowered her. She dropped upon her knees, in the wet and dirt of the ſtreet, and raiſing her hands and eyes towards heaven, remained in that poſture for ſome moments, unable to give utterance to the gratitude that filled her heart.

Such a ſight was more expreſſive than all the powers of eloquence. He raiſed her tenderly from the ground, and ſoothing her with words of comfort, offered to conduct her to

ſome

ſome place, where ſhe might get that refreſhment of which ſhe appeared to be in too great want. "O! Sir" (ſaid ſhe, preſſing the hand that had raiſed her with her cold trembling lips) "my deliverer ſent from heaven to ſave me from "deſpair, let me not think of taking refreſhment "myſelf, till I have firſt procured it for thoſe, "whoſe greater wants I feel ten thouſand times "more ſeverely than my own."

"Who can they be?" (interrupted he, with anxious impatience.) "Can humanity feel "greater wants, than thoſe under which you "are ſinking?"

"My father" (exclaimed ſhe, burſting into tears) "languiſhing under infirmities, acquired "in the ſervice of his country; my mother "worne out with attending on him, and both "periſhing of want (heaven grant they are "not already dead!) together with two infant "brothers, inſenſible of the cauſe of their di-"ſtreſs, and crying to them for a morſel of "bread, which it is not in their power to "give."

"Where can ſuch a ſcene of wretchedneſs "be hidden from relief? I will go with you "directly! but, ſtop! let us firſt procure ſome "comfortable nouriſhment from ſome of the "houſes which are kept open at this late hour "for a very different purpoſe. Come with "me! we have no time to loſe."——With theſe words, he went directly to a tavern, and

enquiring what victuals were dreſſed in the houſe, loaded her with as much as ſhe could carry of the beſt, and putting a couple of bottles of wine in his own pocket, walked with her to her habitation, which was in a blind alley, happily for her not very far diſtant, as weakneſs, together with the conflict of paſſions ſtruggling in her heart, made her ſcarce able to go.

When they came to the door, ſhe would have gone up firſt for a light, but he was reſolved to accompany her, that he might ſee the whole ſcene in its genuine colours. He, therefore, followed her up to the top of the houſe, where opening the door of the garret, ſhe diſcovered to him ſuch a ſcene of miſery, as ſtruck him with aſtoniſhment. By the light of a lamp, that glimmered in the fireleſs chimney, he ſaw lying on a bare bedſtead, without any other covering than the relicks of their own rags, a man, a woman, and two children, ſhuddering with cold, though huddled together, to ſhare the little warmth which exhauſted nature ſtill ſupplied them with.

While he ſtood gazing in horrour at ſuch complicated wretchedneſs, his conductreſs ran to the bed ſide, and falling on her knees, "O! "Sir! Madam! (exclaimed ſhe, in rapture) "Ariſe! I have got relief from an angel of "heaven."———

"Take care!" (anſwered a voice, the hollow trembling of which was ſharpened by indignation)

dignation) "take care it is not from a fiend of "hell, who has taken advantage of your "diſtreſs to tempt you to ruin! for with "whom elſe could you be till this time of "night? But know, wretched girl, that I will "never eat the earnings of vice and infamy. "A few hours will put an end to my miſeries, "which have received the only poſſible addition "by this your folly."

"He muſt be ſuch, indeed" (interrupted my maſter, ſtill more ſtruck with ſentiments ſo uncommon in ſuch a ſituation) "who could "think of tempting her in ſuch circumſtances "to any folly. I will withdraw, while you "ariſe, and then we will conſult what can be "ſooneſt done to alleviate a diſtreſs, of which "you appear ſo undeſerving."—While he ſaid this, he took the wine out of his pockets, and giving it to the daughter, went directly down ſtairs, without waiting for a reply, and walking back and forward in the ſtreet for ſome time, enjoyed the ſublimeſt pleaſure the human heart is capable of, in conſidering how he had relieved, and ſhould further relieve the ſufferings of objects ſo worthy of relief.

By the time he thought they might have learned from their daughter the circumſtances of her meeting with him, and taken ſome nouriſhment, he returned to them, when the moment he entered the room, the whole family fell upon their

knees to thank him. Such humiliation was more than he could bear. He raiſed them one by one, as faſt as he could, and taking the father's hand, "Gracious God! (ſaid he) can "a ſenſe of humanity be ſuch an uncommon "thing among creatures who call themſelves "human, that ſo poor an exertion of it ſhould "be thought deſerving of a return proper "to be made only to Heaven! Oppreſs me "not, Sir, I conjure you, with the mention "of what it would have been a crime I could "never have forgiven myſelf to have known I "had not done. It is too late to think of "leaving this place before to-morrow, when "I will provide a better, if there is not any to "which you chooſe particularly to go. I am "not rich; but I thank Heaven, that it has "bleſſed me with ability, and inclination, to "afford ſuch aſſiſtance as may be immediately "neceſſary to you, till means may be thought "of for doing more."

"O, Sir (anſwered the mother) well might "my daughter call you an angel of Heaven! "You know not from what miſery you have "already relieved"——

"Nor will I know more of it at this time "(interrupted my maſter) than that which I "too plainly ſee. I will leave you now to "your reſt, and return as ſoon as it is "day."—

"Speak

"Speak not of leaving us, Sir," (exclaimed the daughter, who was afraid that if he ſhould go away, he might not return.) "What reſt "can we take, in ſo ſhort a time? Leave us "not, I beſeech you! leave us not in this "place!"——

"Ceaſe, my child! (interpoſed the father) "nor preſs your benefactor to continue in a "ſcene of miſery, that muſt give pain to his "humane heart."——

"If my ſtaying will not give you pain "(anſwered my maſter) I will moſt willingly "ſtay; but it muſt be on condition, that our "converſation points entirely forward to hap-"pier days. There will be time enough here-"after to look back."——

Saying this, he ſat down on the bed-ſide, (for other ſeat the apartment afforded none) between the huſband and wife, with whom he ſpent the little remainder of the night in ſuch diſcourſe as he thought moſt likely to divert their attention from their preſent miſery, and inſpire their minds with better hopes, while the children, all but the daughter who, hung upon his words, comforted at heart with a better meal than they had long taſted, fell faſt aſleep, as they leaned their heads upon their mother's lap.

As ſoon as it was day, "Now, madam" (ſaid my maſter, addreſſing himſelf to the mother)

" I will go and provide a place for your re-
" ception, as you ſay all places are alike to
" you. In the mean time, accept of this trifle
" (giving her ten guineas) to provide ſuch ne-
" ceſſaries as you may indiſpenſably want before
" you remove. When you are ſettled, we will
" ſee what further can be done. I ſhall be back
" with you within theſe three hours at moſt."

For ſuch beneficence there was no poſſibility of returning thanks; but their hearts ſpoke through their eyes, in a language ſufficiently intelligible to his. Departing directly, to ſave both himſelf and them the pain of purſuing a converſation that grew too diſtreſsful, he went, without regard to change of dreſs, or appearance, to look for a proper lodging for them; where he laid in ſuch proviſions of every kind, as he knew they muſt immediately want. This care employed him till the time he had promiſed to return, when he found ſuch an alteration in the looks and appearance of them all as gave his heart delight.

" You ſee, Sir (ſaid the mother, as ſoon as
" he entered) the effects of your bounty; but
" do not think that vanity has made us abuſe
" it. Theſe clothes, what we could raiſe on
" which has, for ſome time, been our ſole
" ſupport, were the purchaſe of happier times;
" and were now *redeemed* for much leſs than

" we

" we muſt have given for the worſt we could " buy."——

" Dear Madam," (interrupted my maſter, taking her hand reſpectfully) " mention not " any thing of the kind to me, I beſeech you. " You will ſoon ſee ſuch times again."—Then turning to her huſband—" I have taken a " lodging, Sir (continued he;) it is conve- " nient, but not large, as I imagined would " be your choice. I will call a coach, to " take us to it directly. If there are any de- " mands here, let the people of the houſe be " called up, and they ſhall be paid. I will be " your purſe-bearer for the preſent."

" No, Sir (replied the huſband) there are " not any. You have enabled us to diſcharge " all demands upon us. People in our cir- " cumſtances cannot find credit, becauſe they " want it."

My maſter would then have gone for a coach, but the daughter inſiſted on ſaving him that trouble; upon which he put the whole family into it, and walked away before them to their new lodging. It is impoſſible to deſcribe what theſe poor people felt, when they ſaw the proviſion he had made for their reception. The father, in particular, could not bear it, but ſinking into a chair, " This is " too much!" (ſaid he, as ſoon as a flood of tears had given vent to the fullneſs of his heart.)

"This is too much. Support me, gracious "Heaven, who has ſent this beſt of men to my "relief; ſupport me under the weight of obli- "gations, which the preſervation of theſe alone "(looking round upon his wife and children) "could induce me to accept."—Then addreſſing himſelf to my maſter, "My heart "is not unthankful (continued he) but gra- "titude in ſuch exceſs as mine, where there "is no proſpect of ever making a return, is "the ſevereſt pain."

My maſter, who ſought none, attempted often to give the converſation another turn; but, finding that they could ſpeak or think of nothing elſe as yet, he took his leave, promiſing to come the next day, when their minds ſhould be better ſettled, to conſult what more was in his power to ſerve them, having firſt privately taken an opportunity to ſlip a couple of guineas into the daughter's hand, to avoid putting the delicacy of her father and mother to further pain.

END OF THE FIRST BOOK.

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE ADVENTURES OF

A GUINEA.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL *gives ſome account of his maſter. Reaſon of his having been bred to, and miſcarried in a particular profeſſion. Intereſting remarks on the different kinds of merit neceſſary to eminence in different profeſſions, confirmed by ſtriking inſtances of their ſucceſs in each. Natural conſequence of his being forced into a profeſſion againſt his inclination. He is compelled by diſtreſs to exert his abilities. Contradictions in his character, and the particular turn of his works accounted for. He viſits his new family. Affecting ſtory of an officer.*

FATIGUED in mind and body, from the debauch of the evening before, and the height to which his tendereſt paſſions had been

wound up by ſuch a moving ſcene, my maſter went directly home, and throwing himſelf on a bed, ſlept till next morning, without diſturbance from pain or reflexion.

The contradictions which I had ſeen in his character prompted my curioſity to take this opportunity of looking back to his paſt life, to try if in the occurrences of that I could trace their cauſe. Born in the middle rank of life, his parents were induced by the dawnings of uncommon genius, which he diſcovered in his earlieſt youth, to give him ſuch an education, as might enable him to make that figure in ſome of the learned profeſſions, for which paternal fondneſs flattered them, that nature had deſigned him.

But, however greatly he profited by his education, the end propoſed by it was far from being pleaſing to his inclinations, which the vigour of his mind and body turned to more active ſcenes. For this reaſon, when he was to quit the purſuits of general learning for thoſe of ſome particular profeſſion, his ardour cooled, and he entirely loſt that ſpirit of emulative ambition, which alone can enable a man to arrive at eminence.

Such a falling-off could not eſcape the anxious obſervation of his friends, but as it was not in their power either to remedy it, or gratify his inclination in any other way, all they could do

do was, to enter him into the ſervice of religion, a profeſſion in which, though the greateſt abilities and application of the human mind are evidently and indiſpenſibly neceſſary, yet, by the perverſion of man, the leaſt are required.

You ſeem ſhocked at the ſeverity of this remark; but a moment's reflexion will open to you the reaſon upon which it is founded. In every other profeſſion, ſucceſs depends upon an opinion of that knowledge, which is called *merit* in it, becauſe mankind ſee the neceſſity of ſuch merit to attain the object of the profeſſion.

But in the church, the caſe is quite different. Every man thinks that he knows enough of religion to ſerve his own turn, and therefore gives himſelf no trouble about the knowledge of thoſe who profeſs it, as he concludes that knowledge can be of no ſervice to him; and therefore *ſucceſs in the church depends not on a general opinion of merit, but on particular favour, which, for the reaſon given before, is not the neceſſary conſequence of ſuch merit.* An *attorney*, or *ſurgeon*, for inſtance, who is not thought to have ſome merit in his profeſſion, will never be employed; but let him by any means get into the church, and curry favour with thoſe in power, and he may riſe to the firſt dignities of it, though he has no more merit in this profeſſion, than he had in that which he was forced to quit for want of bread. And this is the reaſon, why *they who*

have leaſt abilities for any profeſſion are packed into this; and why *they, again, who have the leaſt of theſe, are generally moſt ſucceſsful in it*; as conſciouſneſs of their want of merit makes them take moſt pains to gain favour.

The conſequences of his entering into ſuch a profeſſion againſt inclination are obvious. An indignant ſenſe of his own natural ſuperiority to his ſuperiours in ſtation made him fall into the too common errour of arguing from the *abuſe*, againſt the *uſe*, and hold in contempt not only them, but alſo the very profeſſion itſelf, in which they could have ſuch ſucceſs, and in which neceſſity alone obliged him to continue. He diſdained to apply abilities, which he thought above the end! He neglected duties which he ſaw abuſed; and at length ſunk into a ſtate of liſtleſs indifference, in which he would have died in obſcurity, had not diſtreſs rouſed him, and extorted an exertion of his abilities, which a mind ſoured by diſappointment of its earlieſt hopes, and by domeſtick unhappineſs after, turned to *ſatire*, with an aſperity and ſtrength that made vice tremble in the boſom of the great, and folly hide her head in the higheſt places.

As this domeſtick unhappineſs was the immediate cauſe of thoſe parts of his conduct which contradicted the general tenour of his character, juſtice requires that ſome account ſhould be given of it. In the capricious levity

of

of youth, he fixed his inclinations on a female, who had no other recommendation beſide beauty. Prudence would have forbidden a match, in which there was ſo little proſpect of happineſs, but men of great abilities too often think it beneath them to liſten to her voice. He married her, though, in the phraſe of the world, evidently to his ruin, the return ſhe made him for which proof of his love, was, infidelity to his bed. This is the deepeſt wound that can be given to an heart of any delicacy; it ſharpens the ſting of ingratitude with inſult, by giving a preference that reflects diſhonour. He felt it ſo ſeverely, that deſpair made him ſtrive to drown the ſenſe of it in wine, in the intoxication of which, he too often was guilty of what, in a cooler moment, his reaſon would have bluſhed at, and his principles abhorred; and this was the chief cauſe of that diſtreſs alſo, which, as I obſerved, forced him to exert his abilities, which he did with ſuch ſucceſs, as ſoon enabled him to quit a profeſſion that had not been his choice, and at the ſame time indulge the natural diſpoſition of his heart, by practiſing ſome of the ſublimeſt duties of it.

As ſoon as he awoke next day, he went to viſit his *new* family, where the happineſs that gliſtened in every grateful eye, at his approach, made him happy. After ſome general chat, "It is my duty, Sir (ſaid the father) to give

" you ſome account of myſelf, and of the cauſe " of my falling into that depth of miſery, from " which your beneficence relieved me, that you " ſhould not think it has been laviſhed on ob- " jects altogether unworthy of it.

" I am deſcended from a good family, the " fortune of which my father diſſipated in ſup- " porting a parliamentary intereſt for the mi- " niſtry, the only return he received for which, " and for his voice upon all occaſions, was a " ſmall penſion for himſelf, and a pair of " colours in the guards for me, his only ſon, " with promiſes, indeed, of further proviſion, " which were all forgotten when he died, happily " for himſelf before the end of the parliament, " which, as he had no proſpect of being returned " again, would have left him at the mercy of " creditors, whom it was not in his power to " pay.

" Though I was ſoon ſenſible that my beſt " hopes died with him, I was ſo infatuated to a " profeſſion, the moſt pleaſing to youthful idle- " neſs and vanity, that I laid out the little for- " tune of this beſt of women, whom I had " married in my days of better hope, in the " purchaſe of a company, in a marching regi- " ment; at the head of which I flattered my- " ſelf, that I ſhould meet ſome opportunity, " in the war juſt then broke out, of meriting " further promotion. But I found the vanity

" of

" of ſuch a thought when it was unhappily
" too late.

" After ſeveral years careful ſervice, in the
" courſe of which I had ſealed ſome degree of re-
" putation with my blood, in ſeveral warm ac-
" tions, without advantage to myſelf, or proſ-
" pect of any to my family, who now multi-
" plied the cares of life ten thouſand fold upon
" my head, I was driven by deſpair to exchange
" my company, which I had bought, and
" therefore could have ſold again, the price of
" which would at leaſt have kept us from ab-
" ſolute ſtarving, for an higher rank in a younger
" regiment juſt then ordered upon an expedition,
" the object of which raiſed what was thought
" rational expectation of ſuch profit as ſhould
" eaſe me from the anxieties that made life a
" burthen.

" Allured ſolely by this expectation, I went
" accordingly. The expedition was ſucceſsful.
" I did my duty. I was wounded in the courſe
" of it, to the extreme danger of my life. I
" entirely ruined my conſtitution by the ſeverity
" of the climate; and on my return home was
" reduced to half pay, without receiving ſo
" much prize-money as defrayed the extra-
" ordinary expenſes of the expedition, and
" of the illneſs which I contracted in it;
" while thoſe above me accumulated ſuch
" wealth, as, if divided in any degree of pro-
" portion,

" portion, would have recompenſed the labours " of us, who had literally *bor'n the heat and* " *burthen of the day*, and were now pining in " diſcontent and miſery, aggravated by a par- " tiality ſo ſeverely injurious.

" In this ſituation, I reſolved to throw my- " ſelf at the feet of my Sovereign, and implore " relief from the known goodneſs of his heart. " But his throne was ſurrounded by thoſe, " whoſe intereſt it was to keep the cries of his " people from coming to his ears*; and there- " fore, as it was neceſſary for me to make my " errand known, I never could obtain acceſs " to him.

" The diſtreſs of this diſappointment was ſtill " further heightened by the *delays* in the diſ- " charge of that *half pay*, which was now my " only ſupport; and the *draw-backs* it was ſub- " ject to from the *fees of office*, even when it " ſhould come to be paid, which were ſuch, " that when I attempted to mortgage it, the " wretch's laſt reſource, to put off ſtarving as " long as he can, what I could get from thoſe " *vultures*, who fatten upon the ſufferings of a " ſoldier, was ſcarce ſufficient to ſatisfy our " preſent wants. How, then, could I look for- " ward for a family, dearer to me than life? What

* *This reflection,* NOTORIOUSLY SO GROUNDLESS, *is alone ſufficient to vindicate the authour from any alluſion to preſent times.*

" What could ſupport reſolution, when hope
" was gone? Mine was unequal to the tryal;
" and I was beginning to meditate on putting
" an end to a life of ſuch miſery, without con-
" ſidering that the ſufferings of thoſe, for whom
" I felt ſo much more than for myſelf, muſt be
" ſtill made heavier by ſuch a baſe deſertion of
" them, when heaven, in its mercy, viſited my
" family with a violent fever, which freed me
" from further fears for the future welfare of
" my three eldeſt ſons, and with difficulty
" ſpared the two, whom you ſee before you.
" Oh! my poor boys! happy! thrice happier
" than us, whom you left behind! Excuſe this
" weakneſs, Sir! nature will force the involun-
" tary tear, in ſpite of reaſon; for were they
" not the children of my love?

" During their illneſs, I loſt every other care
" in my attendance upon them; nor omitted
" any poſſible means to preſerve lives, for
" which my fears foreboded nothing but unhap-
" pineſs; but, though their deaths freed me
" from a part of thoſe fears, they left a melan-
" choly void in my heart, which was more
" painful, if poſſible, than any fear. But I
" was not long ſenſible of that pain. My chil-
" dren were ſcarce laid in the grave, when the
" fever ſeiſed myſelf with ſuch violence, that
" I ſoon loſt my ſenſes, nor recovered them
" for above a month; and then only to feel the

" greateſt

" greateſt wretchedneſs, that was ever heaped " upon human creature.

" The expence of my children's and my own " illneſs had not only exhauſted all the money " I had raiſed on the anticipation of my half- " pay, but alſo obliged my wife to mortgage " ſeveral of our beſt effects. Such a reſource " never eſcapes the watchful eyes of people " who keep lodging-houſes. Our landlady no " ſooner perceived it, than ſhe ſeiſed upon the " reſt, and then turned us out, the moment I " could be removed without inſtant death.

" In this ſituation, I muſt have periſhed in " the ſtreet, had not a poor woman, whom " my wife had been obliged to call in to her aſſiſt- " ance when I ſickened, ſhared with us her habi- " tation, in which you found us, as ſhe alſo did " the earnings of her daily labour, till a chair- " man, who was carrying a beau to a ball, threw " her down with ſuch violence, for not making " haſte enough out of his way, that ſhe broke " her leg, and was obliged to be taken to an " hoſpital.

" From that time we ſupported life by mort- " gaging the few clothes we had brought upon " our backs, without one ray of hope to tempt " us to look forward, till they alſo were all " gone, and the miſery of cold added to that " of hunger. In this condition we had been " two days without taſting bread, or feeling

" the

" the warmth of fire, calling inceſſantly upon " death to put that end to our diſtreſſes, which " a ſenſe of religion, made ſtronger by my " wretchedneſs, now prevented my daring to " haſten, when my daughter ſtole out unknown " to us, to ſeek for charity in the ſtreets, where " ſhe wandered, without meeting any thing " but inſults, and ſollicitations to vice, till " heaven directed your ſteps to her.

" Such was the reward of more than twenty " years faithful and hard ſervice, in which I " had fought the battles of my country, in the " oppoſite extremities of the globe, with honour, " and been inſtrumental in making princely for- " tunes for the ſeveral commanders under " whom I ſerved.

" This, Sir, is the ſum of my ſtory, in " which I have been as brief as I could, to avoid " giving you pain. We are now your creatures. " The lives we enjoy are immediately the gift " of your benevolence—a benevolence ſo cri- " tically timed (for we could not have ſub- " ſiſted many hours longer without it) as to " raiſe a hope, that Providence, which ſent you " to our relief, will not leave its work unfiniſh- " ed, but ſave us from falling again into ſuch " miſery, by means agreeable to its own " wiſdom and goodneſs, though impoſſible for " us, in our preſent ſituation, to foreſee."

It

It was ſome time before my maſter, who had liſtened to the officer's ſtory with ſympathetick attention, was able to ſpeak. Recovering himſelf at length, "Fear not;" (ſaid he, in a broken voice) "never were the righteous forſaken; nor—nor—nor—. I have ſome friends, Sir, who may ſerve!—In the mean time take this (reaching him a bank-note for twenty pounds) I will not be refuſed! buſineſs calls me for a few hours; but I will ſee you again in the evening."—Saying this, he hurried away, to hide his emotions, without waiting for a reply, which, indeed, their gratitude left them not the power to make.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

CHRYSAL's maſter carries him to viſit an old acquaintance, who behaves in character, on hearing the officer's ſtory, and ſurpriſes CHRYSAL's *maſter with an account of his having turned* PATRIOT. *The general motive for ſuch a ſtep; with ſome remarks on the difference between practice and profeſſion, in different inſtances. Inſignificancy of private characters in attacks upon a miniſtry, and why. Reflexions on the origin and uſe of* SATIRE, *and the abuſe of the terms* GOOD *and* ILL-NATURE, *with the reaſon why ſo many cry out againſt ſatire.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, in a common way.*

THE moſt intimate acquaintance my maſter had, was the perſon who had been competitor with a former maſter of mine, for admiſſion in the *higher order of* THE MOCK-MONASTERY*. To him he went directly, and relating the officer's ſtory, while it was ſtill warm on his heart, aſked his aſſiſtance to do ſomething more effectual for his relief.

His friend was ſo affected with the melancholy tale, that it was ſome time before he could ſpeak; but when at length he did, it was in a ſtrain very different from what might have

* *Vol.* III—*Page* 239.

have been expected. "And the girl was really "so pretty!" (ſaid he, with a look of inexpreſſible archneſs.) "Well ſaid, my good *Levite*. I preſume you ſatisfied your own appetites with her at the tavern, before you provided for thoſe of her family; though you *ſunk* that part of the ſtory, for fear I ſhould want to come in for a *ſnack* with you. The concupiſcence of you parſons is truely *catholick*, whatever your conſciences may be, and would engroſs the whole ſex, if it was not reſtrained; not indeed that women come within the meaning of the *Mortmain* acts; as none do more good in their generation, and conſequently are better repreſented to the ſtate, than thoſe who are occupied by the clergy."

"Why, what a ſenſual brute muſt you be (anſwered my maſter) to talk of ſatisfying appetites with a wretch juſt periſhing of cold and hunger. But it is all affectation. If you had been in my place, you would have acted juſt as I did; for, whatever airs your wicked wit may aſſume, I know your heart is ſtrongly ſuſceptible of charity."

"Charity! Ha! ha! ha! I expected that. It is always the burthen of a parſon's ſong. They make a cloak of it upon all occaſions; and, indeed, if it will really cover ſins, as they ſay, they are in the right to have it ready, for multitudes enough

"they

" they have, to take up every corner of it. But, " why can you not throw off the *cant* along " with the *cloth?* However, that her hunger " ſhould not damp your deſires any more, here " (giving him half a dozen guineas) is my help " to allay it."——

" I will not refuſe your money, for your " own ſake, in hopes that your beſtowing even " this much ſo well may help to atone for ſome " of the thouſands you have thrown away. " But it was not with any view of getting it, " that I ſpoke to you. Their immediate ne- " ceſſities are ſupplied. I want your aſſiſtance " and intereſt.——

" My intereſt! Ha! ha! ha!—You apply " to a perſon of great intereſt, truely. Why, my " very naming them would be ſufficient to " ruin their hopes for ever. You don't know, " perhaps, that I have turned *patriot*, and *attacked* " *the miniſtry.*"——

" Patriot! for heaven's ſake how long, and " on what occaſion have you taken this ſtrange " whim?"

" Whim! Pray, good Sir, ſpeak with more " reſpect of the nobleſt principle of the human " heart. The thought came into my head the " night before laſt; and as I do not love to " loſe time, eſpecially in things of ſuch mo- " ment, I gave it vent yeſterday, in the ſhape " of a political pamphlet, in which I have " proved to a demonſtration, that the miniſter

" and

" and all his friends and country-men are fools " and rogues, and deſerve to be hanged."—

" Is it poſſible that you can be ſerious! " What, in the name of common ſenſe, could " be your motive for taking ſuch a ſtep as this? " I thought you had expectations of favour from " them."——

" What motives ſhould any man of honour " and honeſty have, but the good of his coun- " try; their neglect of which has rouſed an in- " dignation that will make them tremble."—

" Or, in other words, they have diſappoint- " ed your expectations, and, therefore, you " take this method of being revenged on them, " and extorting, for fear, what they would not " do from favour; the general motive of mo- " dern patriots, I acknowledge; but with what " face you can pretend to the title, proſti- " tuted as it is, I cannot think, as your very " name is a burleſque upon every thing that " is ſerious."

" Pray, how ſo, reverend and grave Sir! " If the moſt profligate ſinner makes the beſt " ſaint, as you ſay, why ſhould not a moderate " rake make a tolerable politician? I believe " you will hardly attribute it to the ſuperiour " excellence of the latter character? but the " truth is, though it is impoſſible for me to " profeſs political principles more contrary to " my practice, than your *moral* practice is to " your preaching, yet you would deny me the

" toleration

" toleration which you avail yourſelf of, and " have my words judged from my actions; " not my actions from my words, as you expect " your own ſhall be.

" But my private character or practice ſig- " nifies nothing to this undertaking, which is " to rip up the practices and characters, publick " and private, of a ſet of people who have " obtruded themſelves into a ſtation that ex- " poſes them to envy, and every accuſation againſt " whom will, therefore, be received implicitly, " without regarding who or what the author of " it is. Not but there is ſufficient room to " attack theſe, whoſe whole private lives have " been ſuch a continued ſeries of vice and " folly, and their publick conduct of blunders " and villainy, that it is impoſſible to ſay or " think any thing bad enough of them, as I " have already proved by inconteſtible inſtances " in my pamphlet, and ſhall by many more in " the courſe of the undertaking. If the tables, " indeed, ſhould turn, and I get into their " place, then they may make the ſame uſe of " my character, and perhaps not without " effect; but at preſent it is quite out of the " queſtion. And now that I have opened " myſelf to you, I expect your aſſiſtance, in " return for my confidence."

" Aſſiſtance in politicks! It is not in my " power to give you any. I hate from my " ſoul, every political ſyſtem under the ſun,

" as a jumble of folly and villainy (I mean as " they are carried into practice, not in their " ſpeculative plans) and therefore never could " throw away a thought upon them."——

" That ſignifies nothing. The aſſiſtance " which I want, you are well qualified to give. " While I detect their political blunders and " villainy, you ſhall laſh their private vices " and follies, till we make them equally ridi- " culous and odious to every man of ſenſe and " virtue in the nation; a taſk that will give " you the pleaſing opportunity of indulging " that *miſanthropy*, which inſpires the muſe of a " *ſatiriſt*, and is miſtaken for virtue, becauſe it " rails againſt vice; for, blazon it out as " pompouſly as you will, nothing but *ill-nature* " can make a man take delight in expoſing the " defects of others; and the more forcibly he " does it, the more powerful muſt that principle " be with him. And by the ſame rule, it is *good-* " *nature* that makes a man fawn upon folly, and " flatter vice; and conſequently, whoever does " it, is virtuous."

" A moſt judicious way of reaſoning, true- " ly! Now, on the contrary, I think it a " much more juſt concluſion, that they " who treat vice with tenderneſs approve in " their hearts, and would practice it if they " could; and that they who expoſe its de- " formities and dangers really deteſt it, " though they may ſometimes, through human

" weakneſs,

" weakneſs, fall into the practice. But I do " not wonder at your remark; it is an old and " common one. All who are conſcious that " they deſerve the laſh deſire to leſſen its " force; and therefore derive ſatire from ill- " nature, in order to obviate the application of " it to the proper object; and faſten upon the " ſatiriſt the fault, which is in themſelves. " And this abuſe of the terms *good* and *ill-* " *nature* is the reaſon why ſome have been " provoked to call the former *folly*.

" But, not to waſte time in diſcuſſions, where " prejudice only can find a doubt, I agree to " your propoſal with pleaſure, and will hold " folly up to ridicule, and brand vice for de- " teſtation, wherever you point them out to " me, without regard to the rank or power of " the perſon; or to any imputations of *miſan-* " *thropy*, and *ill-nature*, which may be levelled " at myſelf, to ſhield againſt, and blunt the " edge of my ſatire; though I no more expect " that I ſhall be able to reform the *moral*, than " you the *political* conduct of the age. How- " ever, it is a duty to make the attempt, be the " ſucceſs what it will. But, by the by, are " you not apprehenſive that your undertaking " may be attended with danger? The people " in power will certainly be provoked; and " power, you know, has long arms, and will " often reach over the fences of law."

" I fear them not! I have friends who are " able, and will defend the laws in me, while " I keep within their fence; one of the prin- " cipal of whom, I expect every minute to " call upon me, to communicate matter, and " conſult upon another ſtroke."——

" Then I'll take my leave. You'll have " things to talk about which you will not de- " ſire me to hear. Conſpirators againſt the " ſtate always chooſe privacy."——

" Conſpirators againſt the ſtate! Our con- " ſpiracy, if ſuch you call it, is for the ſtate, " againſt its worſt enemies, traitors to the truſt " repoſed in them, and fools to their own true " intereſt, as members of the community,"—

" All this I'll grant; and yet it is well if " they do not find means to make themſelves " paſs for the ſtate, and of courſe, you for " the traitors againſt it. They who have the " power, can eaſily aſſume the name."——

As he ſaid this, a ſervant brought his friend a note, who upon caſting his eye over it, " The gentleman I expected (ſaid he) writes " me word, that he is not very well this morn- " ing, and, therefore, deſires to ſee me at his " houſe. If you are going my way, I'll " *ſet you down.*"

" I thank you! (anſwered my maſter.) But " my ambition does not riſe ſo high as that " yet. I do not aſpire to a pillory, or a

" priſon,

" priſon, even in the cauſe of my country.
" Shall we ſee you at dinner?"——

" Moſt certainly! but hold. Can you give
" me *change* for this note? I have not time to
" call upon my banker."——

" I believe I can; but then it muſt be with
" the help of what you have yourſelf given me
" for the officer; like other bankers, who make
" a parade of taking in charitable ſubſcriptions,
" at the ſame time that they ſupport their credit
" with the money."——

" That's right! I'll mention him to the per-
" ſon I am going to. He has abilities to ſerve
" him effectually; and I am ſatisfied never
" wants inclination to do a generous action."—
My maſter then gave him the change of his note, *among which I was*, and took his leave.

CHAP. III.

CHRYSAL *ſums up the character of his late maſter. Different opinions for and againſt the propriety and benefit of* SATIRE. *The former ſupported by good authority. Reaſon of ſome inconveniencies attending the indulgence of ſuch a turn. Character of* CHRYSAL'*s new maſter concluded from a former ſketch. He waits upon his Patron. Character of him, with his motives for ſuch a patronage. He gives ſtriking reaſons for objecting to ſome parts of* CHRYSAL'*s maſter's pamphlet, which the other makes ſome weak attempts to vindicate.* CHRYSAL'*s maſter enjoys the pleaſure of tracing his own fame.*

THE peculiar character of my late maſter made me feel regret at leaving his ſervice, till I ſhould ſee more of him. His abilities did honour to the age and country in which he lived; and the exalted ſentiments of virtue, which broke from him ſpontaneouſly, in the genuine effuſions of his ſoul, gave ſufficient reaſon to judge, that his conduct would be entirely ruled by it, and his talents exerted in the more pleaſing and extenſive way of recommending it to imitation by diſplaying all its advantages and charms, as ſoon as time ſhould cool the fervour of his paſſions, and apply its lenient balſam

balſam to the ſores in his heart, the ſmart of which firſt gave him that poignant turn, and drove him for relief to exceſſes that too often drowned his better reaſon, and led him into actions, which in a cooler moment he abhorred. In a word, his failings were the luxuriance of nature, as his virtues were her perfection.

As I have ſaid that he turned his poetical vein particularly to ſatire, I ſee your curioſity to know my opinion of the propriety and benefit of that manner of applying the powers of *wit*. But I have often told you, that I am not permitted to determine controverted points. Many, with a plauſible appearance of *good-nature*, decry it, as proceeding from a malevolence of diſpoſition, and tending only to ſpread the influence of bad example, by making it known, and harden people in vices they might forſake if not made deſperate by detection! Many, with an appearance of *virtuous indignation*, vindicate it, as terrifying from vice, by ſhowing it in its native deformity, and correcting folly, by putting it out of countenance; which latter opinion is ſupported by the authority of one of the moſt ſenſible, and beſt men of his age.*

* *Would the anachroniſm admit the ſuppoſition, the editor ſhould imagine that the author here meant the writer of* LETTERS FROM A PERSIAN IN ENGLAND, &c. *whoſe words are theſe,* "*If all the edge of wit is turned on thoſe* "*who are juſtly the objects of ridicule, Wit is as great a benefit*

But ſtill the indulgence of this turn is attended with many inconveniencies and dangers, if it be not guided with the greateſt care. That imaginary ſuperiority, which the power of making another ridiculous or deteſted flatters a man with, is ſo pleaſing to the ſelf-love inſeparable from human nature, that it requires uncommon moderation to refrain from exerciſing it upon improper occaſions, and makes him preſumptuouſly conclude, that whatever happens to diſpleaſe himſelf in any particular is a juſt object of publick ridicule and cenſure. An errour, into which the impetuoſity of my *late* maſter ſometimes hurried him.

I have given you a ſketch of the character of my *new* maſter upon a former occaſion*; to which I have only to add here, that a wanton abuſe of uncommon abilities inverted the end for which they were given, making them diſgraceful to himſelf and dangerous to his country, a licentious purſuit of every thing called pleaſure having waſted his fortune, and driven him to the deſpicable neceſſity of proſtituting them to any purpoſe that might promiſe to retrieve his affairs.

The gentleman whom he went to wait upon, the morning I came into his poſſeſſion, was

" *benefit to* PRIVATE LIFE, *as the ſword of the magi-*
" *ſtrate is to* PUBLICK."—*Letter* 40.

* *Vol.* III. *page* 239.

was one who had ſerved his king and country with fidelity and ſucceſs, while he was permitted to follow the dictates of his own reaſon in their ſervice; but gave up the empty and diſgraceful appearance of acting in it any longer, on finding his judgement diſregarded, and himſelf deſigned to be made only a cypher, to increaſe the conſequence of another.

The indignation, however, which had prompted him to take this ſtep, led him not into thoſe unjuſtifiable lengths which are too common on ſuch occaſions. He was faithful to his Sovereign, though he had loſt his favour; and watched attentively over the intereſts of his country, though he was not permitted to promote them. The only inſtance in which his conduct could poſſibly be cenſured was his patronizing ſuch a man as my maſter. But it is a maxim in human politicks, that *the end juſtifies the means*, be they what they will. He wanted to be reſtored to his former power; and thought this man's expoſing the inſufficiency of thoſe who had ſupplanted him in it, the moſt likely way to effect that purpoſe.

To this deſire of power he was not ſtimulated by the uſual methods of repairing a ruined fortune, or making a new family. His wealth exceeded his very wiſhes; and he already enjoyed the higheſt honours he could aſpire to: all he propoſed was the glory of his Sovereign, and the advantage of his country, which that

enthuſiaſtick ambition, from whence proceed the greateſt actions, made him think himſelf the moſt capable, and wiſh to be the happy inſtrument of promoting.

By this gentleman my maſter was received with that *civility* which is commonly miſtaken for *eſteem*. After ſome general chat, on the occurrences and humour of the times, in which my maſter modeſtly took to himſelf the merit of the people's diſcontent at the miniſtry and their meaſures, as raiſed ſolely by his pamphlet, "I "allow the good effects of it (ſaid the gentle- "man) and greatly approve the principles upon "which it is written; but I much fear that "your zeal has tranſported you too far. You "ſhould of all things have avoided involving "the maſter in your charge againſt the mi- "niſters; becauſe that alone can give them "any advantage againſt you, and is therefore "what they always feign, however unjuſtly, "when they are attacked, in order to ſcreen "themſelves behind him. Beſides, the cha- "racter of a Sovereign is ſacred, and ſhould "never be treated but with the higheſt reſpect, "eſpecially when *the virtues of the man are* "*ſuch as would be reſpectable in any character.*"

Such diſapprobation from his principal patron greatly diſappointed my maſter, who was ſo little acquainted with his ſentiments, as to think he bore reſentment againſt his Sovereign for the loſs of his favour, as well as againſt

thoſe who had deprived him of it, and conſequently would be pleaſed with any thing that might ſeem to reflect diſgrace upon him.

Recovering himſelf, however, before his embarraſſment was perceived, "I imagined," (anſwered he, with his uſual preſence of mind) "that it was impoſſible to accuſe me of diſreſpect to one, whom I have ſtudiouſly ſought "every occaſion of praiſing. As for what you "take notice of, my charge is not *perſonally* "*againſt* him, but *through* him, *againſt* thoſe "who had the baſeneſs and inſolence to abuſe "his *goodneſs* and *confidence* in ſuch a manner; "ſo that I think it is impoſſible to wreſt it to "the purpoſe you apprehend."——

"I wiſh you may not be miſtaken; but "I much fear that your argument will not have "the weight you expect. Praiſe, given with "an air of irony, is the keeneſt inſult; be"ſide, in this particular caſe, the praiſes you "beſtow upon his *goodneſs* are all at the ex"penſe of his *underſtanding*. However, do not "be diſpirited at what cannot now be helped. "As I think your intention was not in fault, "you may depend upon my countenance and "ſupport, let what will happen."

This comfortable aſſurance reſtored my maſter to his former ſpirits: not deſiring, however, to continue the converſation any longer upon that ſubject, "I have this morning (ſaid he) made

" no inconſiderable addition to our force. My " friend, the poet, whoſe turn for ſatire I have " heard you ſo much admire, has promiſed me " to exert all his powers in our cauſe. He will " attack the faults in their *private*, while I ex- " poſe their publick characters, and experi- " ence has ſhown that it is eaſy to overturn the " *miniſter*, when the *man* is made ridiculous " or odious."——

" The former I'll grant you; but we have too " many inſtances in contradiction to the latter, " to build much upon it. However, his " powers are great, and may do much, if he " will take care to avoid the rock upon which " you have fallen; and, therefore, I ſhall be " glad to attach him ſeriouſly to us, eſpecially " as he does not ſeem to be utterly void of vir- " tue, notwithſtanding the libertiniſm of his " conduct in ſome inſtances."

My maſter would not miſs ſo favourable an opportunity of doing juſtice to the character of his friend. Accordingly, he related the ſtory of the diſtreſſes of the officer and his family, and his generoſity to them, in ſo affecting a manner, that the gentleman directly gave him a conſiderable ſum of money, for their preſent relief, with a promiſe of providing for them himſelf, if he could not prevail upon thoſe in power to do it.

Pleaſed with a ſucceſs which he knew would be ſo pleaſing to his friend, my maſter took leave

leave of his patron, and ſet out to trace his own fame from one coffee-houſe to another, and enjoy the applauſes which the popularity and boldneſs of his attempt procured him from the multitude, wherever he went; after which he repaired to his uſual haunt, where he dined, and ſpent the evening in his uſual manner.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

CHRYSAL's maſter receives an unwelcome viſit, at an unſeaſonable time. His extraordinary behaviour before his ſuperiours. He is ſent to priſon. CHRYSAL makes ſome unpopular remarks on certain intereſting ſubjects. Conſequences of his maſter's impriſonment, with an account of his behaviour in it.

CONFIDENT as my maſter was of his ſafety, he ſoon found that the fears of his patron were too juſt. He had ſcarce laid him down to ſleep, when his bed was ſurrounded, and himſelf made a priſoner, by a number of fellows, who, under the ſanction of authority, committed all the outrages of lawleſs ruffians, *breaking open his locks, rifling his effects*, and *ſearching into all his ſecrets*.

It was in vain for him to expoſtulate with ſuch people againſt ſo flagrant injuſtice, or claim the protection of the laws. They derided him, and all he could ſay; and having finiſhed their work, dragged him away, with inſults and abuſe, to a magiſtrate, where he had the comfort of waiting a conſiderable time in ſuch agreeable company, before his worſhip was at leiſure to ſee him.

But this, though deſigned as an indignity, was of real advantage to him, as it gave him time

time to recover his ſpirits, and collect preſence of mind for an interview of ſuch importance. Accordingly, when at length he was admitted to the dread tribunal, inſtead of ſhowing any dejection at the danger which ſeemed to hang over him, he behaved in a manner worthy of a better man, and a better cauſe. He aſſerted the violation of the laws in his perſon with ſo much reſolution, and appearance of reaſon, and returned the inſolence of office with ſuch contempt, anſwering illuſively to the inſidious queſtions put to him, and boldly demanding that right of being reſtored to his liberty, which was aſſured to every individual of the community by the eſſential principles of the conſtitution, that his *judges* were ſtartled, and more than once wiſhed they had left him unmoleſted.

However, as there was no receding now, they concluded it to be their beſt way to go through with what they had begun, and bear down oppoſition with a high hand; with which intent they ſent him directly to priſon, in defiance to all he could ſay, where he was treated with uncommon ſeverity, and the method which the law provided for his being reſtored to liberty eluded as long as poſſible, by fineſſes which power only could ſupport.

I ſee your indignation at ſuch an infringement of laws procured by the blood of myriads, and eſtabliſhed by the moſt ſolemn engagements human and divine, for the ſecurity of the common

mon rights of mankind. The part which every man feels in ſuch ſufferings, on a ſuppoſition that they may poſſibly one day fall upon himſelf, naturally intereſts you, as it did the multitude, in my maſter's cauſe. But when you come to examine coolly the manner of his being taken into confinement, which is what gives you ſuch offenſe, it will not appear ſo contrary to reaſon and juſtice, the foundation, and as I may ſay, ſoul of all laws, as popular opinion may preſume.

All power is delegated from the people for the mutual advantage of *governours* and *governed*. To ſupport the uſe, and prevent the abuſe of that power, laws are eſtabliſhed by the conſent of both, which are to be the rule of their actions. But, as it is impoſſible for human wiſdom to foreſee, and provide for every occurrence that may happen, there is eſſentially implied in the firſt truſt a further power of applying *unprovided* remedies to *unforeſeen* caſes, for the ſafety and advantage of the whole.

If it be objected, that theſe remedies may ſometimes be injurious to individuals, by being injudiciouſly or wrongfully applied, the anſwer is obvious. The ſufferings of a few are not to be ſet in competition with the ſafety of the many. Beſide, if the remedies were never to be applied, where there was a poſſibility of a miſtake, the evil might happen, in the time neceſſary for enquiry and deliberation. For, though

though *penal* laws are deſigned only to *prevent future by the puniſhment of paſt crimes*; yet where ſuch crimes, if committed, will exceed the reach of puniſhment, and defeat the laws, the power of prevention muſt be exerted *earlier*, to *anticipate* them before commiſſion.

Without ſuch power, the truſt of government would be imperfect, and inadequate to the end; as, if no puniſhment could be inflicted *thus for prevention*, but by preſcribed forms, human ingenuity, ever moſt fertile in evil, would deviſe expedients to evade it, till perpetration ſhould ſecure impunity, as I ſaid before, perhaps to the ruin of the ſtate.

For theſe reaſons, an extraordinary power muſt have been implicitly given, for extraordinary caſes, or the good of the community, which is the end of government, cannot be obtained. If this power, though, ſhould be abuſed, *the ſacred ſpirit of the laws of your happy country will ſupply the inevitable defect of the latter*, and grant redreſs to the ſufferer, when a proper time comes for enquiring into the circumſtances of the caſe; a redreſs which was not provided by the people* the moſt jealous of their liberties of any who ever united themſelves into civil ſociety, who, ſenſible of the neceſſity of ſuch a reſource, made it a fundamental rule of their government, on any occaſions of uncommon difficulty or danger,

* *The Romans.*

danger, to entruſt the whole power into the hands of ſome one perſon, whom they called DICTATOR, *as his word was to be the law*, without ſubjecting him to controul in the uſe, or account for the abuſe of it, when his power ſhould be at an end.

As ſoon as my maſter's impriſonment was known, the populace all took fire. They made his cauſe their own. They looked upon him as a martyr in the darling cauſe of liberty. They inſulted all government, and committed exceſſes every hour, infinitely more illegal, and dangerous to liberty, than that of which they complained.

In the mean time, his confinement was far from ſitting ſo heavy upon him as might have been expected. Though he wanted the approbation of his own mind, and the *enthuſiaſm* of the principles he profeſſed, to ſupport his reſolution, and encourage him to look forward with hope, levity of temper ſupplied the place of that reſolution, and ſaved him from ſinking under misfortunes, by making him inſenſible of their weight. He rallied his jailors, mimicked his judges, cracked jeſts upon his own undoing, and turned every circumſtance into ridicule, with ſuch drollery and unconcern, as if he was *acting* the imaginary ſufferings of another, not *actually* ſuffering himſelf. How long he would have been able to ſupport that ſpirit though came not to be tried.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL's maſter is viſited in priſon by his patron; and from what motives. His conduct, on being ſet at liberty, and the conſequences of it. Remarkable grounds on which he was ſet at liberty, with a conjecture at the reaſon of fixing upon them. CHRYSAL makes an enquiry into certain matters much talked of, and little underſtood.

AS ſoon as his friends obtained acceſs to him (for the great ſeverity of his confinement was the uncommon ſtrictneſs of it) his patron went to ſee him. As I have taken notice of his diſapprobation of what had brought my maſter into this ſcrape, you are ſurpriſed at his taking a ſtep that ſeemed ſo inconſiſtent with his character. But *his motives for it did honour to the man*, however ſtrange they may appear in the *politician*. He had admitted him to a degree of perſonal intimacy. He had approved of his engaging in a cauſe, to which he was himſelf attached moſt ſanguinely, and he ſcorned to deſert him in diſtreſs, occaſioned by what he thought an errour of his judgement, not a *fault of his intention*.

Beſide the conſolation to himſelf, the honour of ſuch a viſit was of the greateſt advantage to my maſter's affairs; as it lightened the perſonal prejudices againſt him, and gave a good opinion of

of a cauſe, which appeared to have the countenance of ſuch a man.

Intoxicated with the popularity he had thus acquired, which if rightly managed might have done great matters, he was no ſooner at liberty, than he threw off all reſtraint, and ran into ſuch licentiouſneſs, as in a ſhort time leſſened its force, and loſt him every trace of the good opinion of all who gave themſelves time to think of the cauſes and conſequences of ſuch conduct. But his triumph was not long lived.

He had been reſtored to his liberty, not as a right common to all the members of the community, on a ſuppoſition of the illegality of the manner in which he had been deprived of it; but in conſequence of certain immunities, annexed to a particular part of the legiſlature, to which he belonged.

Though the abilities and integrity of the magiſtrate who made this diſtinction were unqueſtionable, ſome perſons, who looked farther than the preſent moment, imagined they could trace it to a cauſe not commonly attended to. He had on former occaſions been inſtrumental in depriving ſome people of liberty in the ſame manner; to have condemned that manner therefore now, as illegal, would have been condemning himſelf; at the ſame time, that upright obedience to the dictates of his preſent opinion

opinion obliged him to ſet him free. Such a difficulty muſt have been diſtreſſing; but this diſtinction delivered him from it, and enabled him to ſave his credit, and conſcience both; as thoſe people had bor'n no part in the legiſlature, and therefore had not been entitled to ſuch immunity.

I ſee your indignation ariſe at the thought, that in a country which boaſts of being governed by *equal* laws, any one ſet of men ſhould enjoy immunities denied to the reſt; but that indignation proceeds from viewing the matter in a partial light. In the country where your lot has happily fallen, the end of government is better ſecured by a diviſion of its powers, than in any other under heaven. The great wiſdom of thoſe who made this diviſion appears in the proviſions made to preſerve each part in it independent of the reſt, the only means by which the diviſion itſelf could be preſerved.

Now, as the *executive* power *neceſſarily* belongs ſolely to the prince, it was *equally neceſſary* to ſecure thoſe who bore a part with him in the *legiſlative* from any undue exertion of that power, which might be attempted in order to break through that independence, and join the *legiſlative* to the *executive*; or, in other words, *veſt both powers abſolutely, and without limitation, in the prince.* And this was the reaſon of immunities ſo much talked of, and ſo little underſtood.

If

If it be ſaid, that theſe immunities operate alſo againſt fellow-ſubjects, from whom there can be no ſuch fear, and are ſometimes (perhaps too often) abuſed to diſhoneſt ends, the anſwer muſt be ſought for in the depravity of the human heart, which will pervert the beſt inſtitutions to the worſt purpoſes, and makes it neceſſary to preclude every exception, that it ſhould not be extended to ſerve them. As for inſtance, if the meaneſt ſubject of the ſtate had a right to claim the aſſiſtance of the civil power in every caſe againſt any member of the legiſlature, while in his *legiſlative* capacity, that right might be ſubborned, or feigned, by the *executive* power in ſuch a manner, as to overturn his independency, and to prevent his diſcharging the truſt committed to him: for which reaſon it is better that an individual ſhould ſuffer (to ſuppoſe the worſt) than an opportunity be given for ruining the whole community; according to the known maxim, that an *evil (which affects but one)* is preferable to an *inconvenience (which affects many.)* And this immunity, which is really the ſhield and ſafety of the ſtate, can never be invaded, but from a deſign againſt the liberty of the ſtate, nor abſolutely given up, without giving up that liberty along with it; though the right may be waved in particular inſtances, which appear unworthy of the benefit of it. To actions, criminal in their own nature, between individuals,

individuals, or immediately dangerous to the ſtate, it was never deſigned to be extended, as in ſuch caſes it would have been deſtructive of the end for which it was inſtituted.

While my maſter was running riot in this extravagant manner, ſome things happened which raiſed in his favour the indignation and pity of many, who diſliked the man, and diſapproved of his proceedings, becauſe they ſaw him perſecuted by unjuſtifiable means.

It may well be imagined, that I did not remain long enough in his poſſeſſion to ſee the concluſion of this affair; but, as I had ample opportunity of being acquainted with it at the time, and ſee that your curioſity is intereſted in the event, I will continue the account here, eſpecially as the principal occurrences in my next ſervice were connected with it in ſo particular a manner, that it is neceſſary to explain one, in order to underſtand the other.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL's *maſter takes a foreign tour. Remarks upon national reflexions, and attacks upon private characters.* CHRYSAL's *maſter is called to an account for certain improper liberties, by a very improper perſon, whom he treats with uncommon propriety.* CHRYSAL *makes ſome out-of-the-way reflexions on a queſtion much canvaſſed to little purpoſe.*

WHEN my maſter had in ſome meaſure exhauſted the firſt flow of his ſpirits upon the recovery of his liberty, he made a ſhort excurſion abroad, as if merely for amuſement, but in reality to provide a place of retreat, in caſe of the worſt, as his apprehenſions could not but be alarmed, whenever he allowed himſelf time to think.

I have obſerved, that in the account he gave my late maſter, when he firſt told him of his attack upon the miniſter, he ſaid he had included in it all, his *country-men.* This he really had done on that, andcontinued to do, on all other occaſions with a licentiouſneſs unexampled; but which loſt its force, and became contemptible, by ſinking into ſcurrility.

Attacks

Attacks upon private characters, unleſs forced by neceſſity, or deſigned to ſerve good purpoſes, ſuch as perſonal reformation, or caution to others, are literally *abuſe*, and proceed always from a bad heart; but national reflexions, as they can anſwer no good purpoſe of any kind, are abuſe in every ſenſe, and proceed equally from *folly* and *malevolence*. A *folly*, indeed, that is often puniſhed by *fools*, who take to themſelves that abuſe, which belongs not to them in particular, and would paſs by, without lighting upon them, if not applied thus by themſelves.

My maſter had not been long abroad, when a *country-man of the miniſter's* thought proper to call him to account for the liberties he had taken with his country. The abſurdity of ſuch a ſtep in any man was ſtill aggravated by the peculiar circumſtances of this perſon, who had actually given weight to the ſevereſt part of the charge againſt his country (indeed, the only part that would admit of weight, the reſt being, as I have ſaid, nothing but ſcurrility) by engaging in the ſervice of the enemies of its preſent government, and fighting their battles againſt it. Such an antagoniſt, therefore, was beneath the notice of any man of reaſon, and accordingly was treated ſo by my maſter, who on this occaſion behaved with a moral propriety, and prudence, much above the tenour of his general character. But his enemies beheld his conduct in a differ-

light, and attributed to *cowardice* what was really the effect of *courage*.

You ſeem ſurpriſed at my ſaying that his declining to fight was the effect of courage! but, reflect a moment, and you will ſee that it is *the motive of fighting*, and *not the mere fighting*, that conſtitutes true courage; and that the *faſhionable courage* of venturing life for punctilios of imaginary honour is *real cowardice*, as it proceeds ſolely from fear of the falſe cenſure of the world; *and, therefore, that to brave that cenſure in ſuch caſes is the higheſt courage*.

I would not be underſtood by this, to declare abſolutely againſt a man's fighting in his own cauſe, in all caſes indiſcriminately. Different circumſtances make an eſſential difference in things which ſuperficially appear to be alike. A man's venturing his life, as I have ſaid, in vindicating *empty punctilios of imaginary honour*, or in *ſupport of injuſtice*, is the higheſt and moſt ungrateful inſult to the authour of that life, who has made the preſervation of it the firſt principle of action, and conſequently an indiſpenſible duty, when it can be preſerved without violation of thoſe greater duties which he has thought proper to preſcribe.

But, as there are other things more valuable than life, becauſe without them life would loſe its value, reaſon, which is the voice of heaven, permits to hazard the leſſer good for the preſervation

ſervation of the greater, and this is the juſtification of war between different ſtates.

To prevent the evils, which ſuch a recourſe between individuals in the ſame ſtate, muſt be attended with, laws are eſtabliſhed to preſerve thoſe rights, and redreſs injuries which they may offer to each other; to theſe laws, therefore, it is an indiſpenſible duty to recur for ſuch redreſs and preſervation, where they are able to effect them: but this duty does not ſeem to extend ſo far as abſolutely and indiſcriminately to preclude the other method of a man's ſtriving at the hazard of his life to effect them himſelf, when the laws cannot do it, as is too often the caſe, it being impoſſible for human wiſdom to make proviſion for every occurrence, which in the complication and extenſiveneſs of human action may require it.

An opinion ſo contrary to that profeſſed by all who have undertaken to diſcuſs this ſubject, however conſonant to the ſenſe of mankind in general, as ſhown in their practice, ſhould be ſupported by the plaineſt and moſt convincing reaſons.

A good name is the immediate jewel of the ſoul; it is the firſt fruit, and the reward of virtue: the preſervation of it, therefore, is indiſputably worth hazarding life for, where the laws have not ſufficiently provided for its defenſe; as is the caſe, in many of the moſt delicate and tender

points. If a man, for inſtance, is unjuſtly accuſed of a fact that ruins his *good name*, at the ſame time, that the accuſation comes not within the reach of any law, from which he may receive redreſs, can reaſon ſay, that he is not juſtifiable in ſtriving for that redreſs himſelf, and vindicating his good name, at the hazard of his life, when that life would be only miſery without it?

But here another difficulty occurs. Shall a man, it is ſaid, put himſelf upon a level with his injurer, and riſque a ſecond injury, in ſeeking ſatisfaction for the firſt? This certainly is an evil, but muſt be ſubmitted to, to prevent a greater.

If a man were permitted to redreſs himſelf abſolutely, without ſuch a riſque, the conſequence would be, that partiality to himſelf would make him think every thing that ſhould diſpleaſe him an injury ſufficient to merit ſuch a redreſs, whereby murthers would be multiplied to the reproach of humanity, and ruin of the ſtate. But where this riſque makes the redreſs attended with danger, people are cautious not to run into it, but on what they at leaſt think good grounds.

Beſides, riſquing life in an even ſcale is in ſome manner ſtaking it upon the juſtice of the cauſe, and appealing to heaven for deciſion; and conſequently ſucceſs clears the character in general

general eſtimation; whereas killing inſidiouſly, or without ſuch equal riſque, only confirms the firſt charge, on a preſumption of conſciouſneſs, and aggravates it with the weight of new guilt. And this was the ſenſe of mankind, till the remedy was perverted to ſuch an exceſs, as to become worſe than the evil, and therefore neceſſary to be aboliſhed, as far as human laws can aboliſh a general principle of action.

One particular, though, in the laws made to aboliſh it deſerves remark, as it ſhows a ſtriking inſtance of the ſagacity with which human laws are often made. Killing a man in a deliberate duel, be the cauſe ever ſo important, and utterly unprovided for in the law, is accounted *murther*, and made capitally criminal; but killing in a drunken broil, or ungoverned guſt of paſſion is only a pardonable offenſe, and called by the ſofter name *of man-ſlaughter!* Now, if the makers of that law had but conſidered which action proceeded from the worſt cauſe, and was liable to be attended with the worſt conſequences, from the poſſible frequency of it, they might perhaps have ſeen reaſon to reverſe the caſe, and made the *latter* capital, and the *former* at leaſt pardonable.

In a word, he who takes away the life of another, or loſes his own, in a trivial or unjuſt cauſe, or where the laws of his country have provided him redreſs, is guilty of murther;

whereas, he who kills, or is killed, in a cauſe of real importance, for which there is no remedy provided him by the law, ſins not againſt the *ſpirit* of that law, however he may againſt the *letter*; and conſequently ſeems to be entitled to an immunity from the penalties of it. This reaſoning, though, reſpects only the reaſon of the law, and is by no means laid down as a rule for practice; it being the indiſpenſible duty of a ſubject to obey the plain letter of the law, without preſuming to oppoſe his private opinion to it, otherwiſe than by humble application to proper authority to have it altered.

CHAP

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter's late conduct draws him into a new ſcrape, in which he comes off but ſecond-beſt. He takes advantage of his misfortune to make his eſcape from a greater. He ſuffers the reſentment of his enemies, as far as they can reach him; and meets from his friends the fate of all uſeleſs tools, after having ſerved them with improbable ſucceſs. A ſtriking inſtance of the advantage of an upright judge, and equal laws.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THE opinion, that my maſter's having behaved in this manner proceeded from a want of ſpirit ſoon laid him under a neceſſity of ſhowing the contrary. A perſon who was involved deeper than he choſe to appear in his accuſations againſt the miniſter, though he was known to be his creature, thought he might ſafely invalidate the credit of the charge, and curry further favour with his patron, by denying it in terms of ſuch abuſe, as ſhould make the accuſer infamous, on ſubmitting to them, as he imagined he would.

But in this he found himſelf miſtaken. The *captiouſneſs of falſe honour*, that often paſſes for true reſolution, *which is the only reſult of virtue*, was now picqued; and two beings (for it was

impoſſible for the other to draw back) who called themſelves rational hazarded their lives, in ſupport of what neither could have ſupported by reaſon.

The event proved immediately unfavourable to my maſter, who received a wound, that for ſome time ſeemed to threaten his life. But he ſoon thought the danger amply made amends for, by the pretence it gave him to put off from time to time the reſentment of that part of the legiſlature to which he belonged, for the offenſe which had occaſioned his being confined, and at length to fly from it, when he found it could not be any longer prevented by ſuch fineſſes, from burſting on his head. Such a flight was an implicit acknowledgement of his guilt. He was, therefore, deprived of his part in the legiſlature, and conſequently of all the immunities annexed to it, and given up to the common courſe of the laws, for that and other matters, whenever he ſhould be found within the reach of their power. Nor was this all! To ſhow ſtill ſtronger diſapprobation of his conduct, the breach of thoſe immunities, upon which the magiſtrate had founded his diſcharge from confinement, was over-looked, and ſuch offenſes as his excluded from their protection for the future.

You cannot be ſurpriſed at his meeting ſuch a fate. The tools of a ſtateſman, however ſucceſsful they may have been, are always thrown aſide

aſide with neglect, the moment they have done their work; but when they fail, however blameleſly, or run into any errour, though only from exceſs of zeal, the weight of the neglect is made ſtill heavier, by heaping all the blame upon them. But what will you think, when I tell you, that, unequal as he muſt appear to have been to ſuch an attempt, in conſequence, character, and abilities, he raiſed ſo threatening a ſtorm, that the miniſter thought proper to retire out of its way; as all his friends apprehended they ſhould have been obliged to follow him: a ſucceſs, for which he was in great meaſure indebted to the aſſiſtance of my late maſter, who repreſented their private characters in ſuch colours, in his ſatirical writings, as will make their memories pay a dear price for their power, the poetical merit of his works, in which their names are branded with indelible infamy, enſuring their immortality. Such is the baſis, upon which ſtateſmen found their greatneſs; and ſo eaſily is a jealous populace led away, by any thing that flatters their preſent humour.

I ſay not this, as deciding upon the merit of the diſputes in which he was concerned. I think too meanly of human politicks in general, to give my opinion in favour of any one ſcheme of them, in preference to another, They are all alike a jumble of villainy and blunders. All I intend is, to ſhow on what a ſandy founda-

tion men who value themſelves upon their wiſdom wear out their lives in anxious toils and dangers, to build their hopes; and what unworthy means are often made uſe of to overturn them, and work ends, reputed great, on purpoſe, perhaps, to humble man in his own eyes.

As for my maſter, he was no ſooner removed out of the ſight of the mob, whoſe idol he had been in ſuch an extravagant degree, than he was entirely out of their mind, and the ſtorm he had raiſed ſubſided ſo totally, as to leave no other trace behind it, but his ruin.

I have obſerved your anxiety to know whether he ever obtained redreſs for the injuſtice done him in his property, and the injurious treatment he received when he was firſt apprehended, as I ſaid that the fellows employed to take him, had, under the ſanction of authority, committed all the outrages of lawleſs ruffians. The intereſt you take in the cauſe of ſuch a man can ariſe from nothing but your love of juſtice, *which ſhould not be violated in the perſon of the moſt unjuſt.* It will, therefore, give you pleaſure to be informed, that the laws of your country never ſhone with brighter luſtre, than in this inſtance.

In deſpite of every artifice and effort which power and chicane could make uſe of to evade, or intimidate from, the execution of them (a ſtriking inſtance of the latter of which was de-

priving his patron of every degree of power and honour, of which he could be deprived without regard to his great ſervices, and perſonal conſequence, only for appearing in his cauſe) an able and upright magiſtrate ſupported them with ſuch reſolution and judgement, that he obtained exemplary redreſs for all he had ſuffered, that could be redreſſed, as did ſeveral others, who had been involved in the ſame circumſtances, as having been employed by him.

In gratification to your curioſity, I have thus given you the general heads of his ſtory. To have dwelt on the minuter circumſtances, however curious in themſelves, would have led me too great a length, beſide that they come not within my deſign, as I was not directly in his poſſeſſion when they happened. To return, therefore, now to the regular chain of my own adventures, I muſt go back to the time of my leaving his ſervice, which was not very long after he had been releaſed from his confinement.

Among the crowds that came to congratulate him upon this event, was a clergyman, whoſe profeſſions of perſonal attachment, and reſpect for his principles and abilities, were ſtrained to ſuch a fulſome height, as would have diſguſted vanity itſelf.

My maſter ſaw through him directly, and played him off with humour peculiar to himſelf, till he concluded with telling him, that he had

a work then in hand, upon the ſame ſcheme with his, which he intended to publiſh by ſubſcription.

My maſter, who knew the man, took the hint, in the proper light of a modeſt way of begging, and *clapped* a couple of guineas into his hand, deſiring to be inſerted in his liſt, *upon which occaſion I left his ſervice.*

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Reaſon of the joy with which CHRYSAL *was received by his new maſter. Account of a curious, though not uncommon way of getting a living. Converſation between* CHRYSAL'*s maſter and his gueſt. They compare notes on their different attempts in the literary trade.* CHRYSAL'*s maſter is encouraged by his friend from his own example. A remarkable account of a certain matter that made much noiſe.*

THE joy my *new* maſter felt on the receipt of ſo ſmall a ſum, ſhowed the conſequence it was of to him. He thanked his benefactor, in terms of rapture, and vowing eternal gratitude and attachment to him and his cauſe, departed with an happy heart. Nor was his joy without cauſe He had invited an acquaintance to ſup and ſpend the evening with him, and had neither money nor credit to provide any thing for his entertainment.

Deſpicable as the vanity of making invitations in ſuch circumſtances may appear to you, it was one of his chief reſources, to ſupport himſelf and his family; as he never invited any, but ſuch as he expected to borrow much more from than it coſt him to entertain them.

Your indignation at the mention of ſo mean a ſhift ſhows your happy ignorance of the ways of

of this populous place, in which there are numbers, who keep up a decency of external appearance, and ſupport life only by this method of raiſing contributions on their acquaintances, ſpending with one what they have got from another, in order to get from him too, and ſo on; with this difference only from common beggars, that they ſeldom apply to the ſame perſon twice, and inſtead of praying for their benefactors with an appearance of gratitude, wherever they meet them avoid their company, and are always ſeeking for new acquaintances, as quarry for them to prey upon.

On this errand he had ſallied out this morning, but met with ſuch bad ſucceſs, that he had been obliged to have recourſe to the *ſubſcription-ſcheme*, an addition which he had lately made to his former plan. His joy, therefore, at my late maſter's generoſity was but natural. He returned home in high ſpirits, and giving his wife half his prize, to provide *two or three nice little things*, ſecured *me*, for future contingencies.

Every thing being thus adjuſted, his gueſt, who came punctually at the appointed time, was received with all the *formalities* and *airs* of *politeneſs*, and *high life*. The converſation before, and at ſupper, ran on the uſual topicks, of the *weather*, *politicks*, and the *ſecret hiſtory of the day*, but when my maſter's lady had withdrawn, and he ſaw his friend begin to palate his wine with

pleaſure,

pleaſure (for he never made his puſh till the heart was warm) he took occaſion from ſome *modeſt* mention the other made of his munificence in the relief of merit in diſtreſs, to lament his own inability to indulge that darling pleaſure of his ſoul, as a proper introduction to his buſineſs.

" I have wondered with much concern (an-
" ſwered his friend) at your languiſhing ſo long
" in this obſcurity. It is all your own fault.
" Why do you not exert yourſelf? There is
" nothing which ſpirit and diligence cannot
" conquer."——

" Very true, my deareſt friend" (replied my maſter, with a ſhrug of his ſhoulders, and a heavy ſigh.) " But what can diligence or abilities
" either do, when they cannot find employ-
" ment. I have *offered* myſelf to *miniſtry* and
" *oppoſition*, to *bookſellers*, and *news-writers*; and
" all to no purpoſe: though indeed if it was not
" for the aſſiſtance of one of the latter, who
" now and then takes an *eſſay* or a *letter* from
" me, I ſhould be utterly at a loſs. So that
" what can I do."——

" What! why any thing rather than be idle.
" If one thing won't do another may. There
" is not an article *in the trade*, which I have not
" tried in my time. I *made bibles*, *magazines*,
" and *reviews*; *ſermons*, *ballads*, and *dying-*
" *ſpeeches*; and though all failed I never loſt my
" ſpirit.

" ſpirit. The miſcarriage of one ſcheme only ſet " my invention at work to ſtrike out another. " No man can have greater difficulties to ſtrug- " gle with than I had; and yet you ſee I have " got over them all."——

" Yes! but, my deareſt friend, you had ad- " vantages! the countenance and aſſiſtance of " ſuch a patron as your's"——

" Were juſt as great advantages to me, as " your patron's are to you; and no more. " I had the honourable advantage of *leading a* " *bear*, for a bit of bread; and betraying his " ſecrets to his father and mother, for the hope " of a church-living, which I ſhould not have " got at laſt, but that it was not worth ſelling."

" You aſtoniſh me! Don't you owe all your " preferments, all your affluence, to the intereſt " of your patron?"

" What I owe my preferments to is not ne- " ceſſary to mention; but my affluence I owe " to a very different cauſe. *The detection of* " *that impoſtor* was the thing that made my for- " tune. I might have remained in my original " poverty to this day, if it had not been for " that."——

" For that! Is it poſſible? I cannot con- " ceive that the profits upon the ſale of a pam- " phlet or two (and that not a very extenſive " ſale neither) could do ſuch great things. " My *novel*, I thought, bade as fair for a *good*

" *run*, as any thing: it was *ſeaſoned high* to the " taſte of the times, and yet it did very little " more than pay."——

" The ſale! Ha! ha! ha! No, no! I did " not depend upon that. My profit came in " another way entirely."

" What can be your meaning? If it be not " too great a ſecret, I ſhould be much obliged " to you to explain this matter. It may poſſi- " bly be of ſervice to me."—

" Why, on that account, and as I think I can " depend upon your honour, I don't much care " if I do. If you are ſo much ſurpriſed at my " ſaying that I made my fortune by that pam- " phlet, what will you think when I tell you " further, that I never wrote one line of it, " nor was I any more concerned in the ſale " than you, who knew nothing of the matter? " But, not to perplex you with gueſſing at " what it is impoſſible you ſhould ever diſcover! " You can be no ſtranger to the noiſe that *im-* " *poſtor* made, when he firſt came here. While " hedid no more than tell his own ſtory, it was " thought, by his old fraternity, to be the beſt " way not to give it conſequence by contradict- " ing it, but let it die away of itſelf; beſide, " that poſſibly it might not have been ſo eaſy to " contradict it to any effect, while the perſons " concerned were all living, and the facts freſh " in every one's memory. But when he went

" ſo

" ſo far as to attack the whole body, and was " evidently undermining the foundation upon " which they ſtood, by tearing off the veil of " antiquity behind which they hid themſelves, " and expoſing all their myſtery to light, the " matter became more ſerious, and it was judg- " ed neceſſary to ruin his character, in order to " invalidate the credit of his work, the merit " of which made a direct attack not only diffi- " cult, but alſo too doubtful of ſucceſs to ha- " zard an affair of ſuch importance upon it.

" For this reaſon, heaven and hell were con- " jured up, and every engine ſet at work to " prove his ſtory of himſelf falſe in every par- " ticular, and make him appear the moſt com- " plicated villain that ever exiſted. But the " credit of thoſe who made this attack upon " him was too low for it to have any effect, " as their principles, and the intereſted motives " upon which they proceeded, were ſufficiently " known, ſo that it only did him ſervice, by " ſhowing his conſequence.

" While they were conſidering how to repair " this defeat, neceſſity ſuggeſted to me the " lucky thought of offering them my aſſiſtance. " I had already got ſome degree of credit by " anticipating time in the detection of two ſilly " impoſtures, the abſurdity of which would " ſoon have diſcovered them without my help. " This gave weight to my offer: accordingly,

" they

" they readily embraced it: and desiring only " the *sanction of my name* (for which you may " judge, I was *well paid*) took all the trouble " upon themselves.

" The reason, which defeated them assisted " me. Every thing *I was thought to say* carried " weight, as *appearing to proceed* from the high- " est candour, and attachment to truth, as no- " thing else could *naturally be supposed* to have " made me take such pains to detect an im- " posture, so favourable to the principles I " professed myself. The publick also had got " enough of his story, and was ready to listen " to one against him. The consequence you " know. His character was ruined with the " publick; and of course a prejudice raised " against his work, which ruined that also, " without the trouble of a regular confutation, " which, as I observed before, might not have " been an easy matter: and now I hope the " mystery is explained to you."——

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's *maſter makes ſome ſtriking remarks on his friend's account of this myſterious tranſaction, and draws inferences from it, not commonly attended to. He entertains his friend with a curious ſong, who makes an important hit, juſt in his own character, upon it.* CHRYSAL's *maſter boggles a little at firſt, at his friend's propoſal, but is encouraged by his example to undertake it.*

" I Am much obliged to you, for ſuch a " proof your confidence (returned my " maſter) particularly, as it clears up ſome " points to me, which I own gave me equal " concern and ſurpriſe; and of which delicacy " prevented my deſiring an explanation from " you. Theſe were the manner in which that " attack was made upon him, and the argu- " ments and proofs brought in ſupport of it, " which were ſo *unfair*, *inconcluſive*, and in " many inſtances *contradictory*, that I was " aſtoniſhed any man of ſenſe and honeſty could " make uſe of, or be influenced by them."

" Why, that is very true. Their zeal often " over-ſhot the mark to be ſure. But that ſig- " nified nothing. Set the publick once upon " the ſcent of ſcandal; and they'll hunt it like

" blood-

" blood-hounds, through thick and thin. No-
" thing can be ſo groſs as to ſtop them. You
" may as well whiſtle to the wind to change its
" courſe, as ſpeak reaſon to the people, when
" they have conceived a prejudice."——

" But what is your opinion of that affair? Is
" he, or is he not, the impoſtor they would make
" him? For I confeſs, the arguments by which
" they would prove him one are ſo far from
" anſwering their deſign with me, that *I think
" they prove the contrary, by proving nothing*; as it is
" natural to conclude, that if there were any
" better, ſuch would not have been made uſe
" of. But you certainly muſt have had ſuf-
" ficient opportunities of being informed, in the
" intercourſe you neceſſarily had with them."

" As to that, I know no more of the matter
" than you do, nor ever gave myſelf the trouble
" to enquire. All the intercourſe I had with
" them, was only to ſave appearances, and get
" my money. Whether he was an impoſtor or
" not was the ſame thing to me. I was paid for
" ſeeming to prove him one; and that was all
" I cared for."——

" But you continue to call him one ſtill.
" Do they alſo pay you for that now?"——

" No. I do that for my own credit. Were
" I to retract, all the ſcandal that has been
" heaped upon him, *in my name*, would revert
" upon myſelf, ſo that whenever I mention him,

" I am

" I am obliged to do it in the old phraſe. I " know ſome *ſqueamiſh* people would have *ſcrupled* " the whole; but that is not my way of think- " ing. I hold nothing to be ſo great a reproach, " as poverty; nor any thing a ſin that can get " over it. And ſo, here's my ſervice to you. " I wiſh you could hit upon ſuch another op- " portunity."——

" And if I would ſcruple to make uſe of it, " may I periſh in my preſent poverty; and I " defy the devil to find an heavier curſe."

The converſation then turned to more general topicks, in the courſe of which my late maſter naturally coming to be mentioned, " That's " right (ſaid my maſter) I have ſomething to " ſhow you, that will give you pleaſure. You " may remember, I told you, that I am ſome- " times obliged to a printer of my acquaintance " for *helping me to a job, in the letter or eſſay-way.* " Happening to call upon him this morning, to " try if he could take any thing from me, he " ſhowed me this (pulling a piece of greaſy " paper out of his pocket) which I think " really a curioſity. It is a *proof* of a bawdy- " ſong, which the gentleman we have been " talking of wrote, and had a few copies of " printed for the amuſement of his particular " intimates. My friend got it from one of his " journey-men, who ſometimes works for that " gentleman, and ſays there are a good many

" more

" more of them, which are all printed together " in a ballad. You'll find it worth your read- " ing. Nothing ever was ſo highly worked up. " It gave me *ineffable* pleaſure."——

" If you can prove this to be wrote by that " perſon" (ſaid the other ſpitting, and wriggling in his chair, after having pored over it for ſome time) " your fortune is made! you know his enemies " are ſtriving to run him down, by any means. " Now, this will give them ſo plauſible an han- " dle againſt him, that they will not fail to re- " ward you liberally for the diſcovery. All you " have to do is, to prove it plainly upon him."—

" I am pretty ſure that may be done;" (anſwered my maſter, with ſome heſitation) " But I—I—I— I hardly know how—I am " under perſonal obligation"———

" Nay, if you let ſuch things as that inter- " fere, I give you up. What ſignifies *paſt* " *obligation*, when put in competition with " *preſent intereſt?* You know what my old an- " tagoniſt ſays, that it is a rule among his " former fraternity never to let any ſocial or " moral duties interfere with religion, of which " he gives a remarkable inſtance in his own " ſtory. Now, *my intereſt is my religion*; and " every thing which interferes with that I ab- " jure; as I have ſufficiently proved. But I " beg pardon, I would by no means preſs you " to do any thing againſt your conſcience, if it " is ſo tender."———

" Wrong

"Wrong me not, my deareſt friend, by ſuch "an opinion: my conſcience is as far from "being tender as your's can be. I was only "ſurpriſed, that I had not myſelf ſeen what "you mentioned. But now that your friend-"ſhip has pointed it out to me, you ſhall ſee "me purſue it as eagerly as you can deſire. All "I want is your direction! Leave the reſt to "me."

The remainder of the evening was ſpent in conſultation upon the plan proper to be purſued, the forming of which my maſter ſubmitted implicitly to the ſuperiour judgement and experience of his friend, who was ſo pleaſed with this mark of his reſpect, and ſo ſure of ſucceſs, that on going away he took a modeſt hint, and lent him five guineas, reminding him at the ſame time of the confidence he had placed in his honour, by diſcloſing his affairs to him, and enjoining him to ſecreſy.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL's *maſter purſues his ſcheme, and violates moral honeſty to ſerve the cauſe of virtue and religion. He waits upon his patron, who honeſtly refuſes a character to which he knows he has no right; but undertakes the affair from a more prevailing motive, in which he is remarkably aſſiſted by another perſon of leſs modeſty, who pleads the cauſe of religion and virtue in vain, till honour at length turns the ſcale in their favour.* CHRYSAL's *maſter is diſappointed in his hopes, and makes uſe of an expedient in character, to eſcape from the juſt reward of all his labours.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

NOT to loſe a moment's time, in a matter of ſuch importance, my maſter went next morning to his worthy friend the printer, to whom he opened his ſcheme, and by his influence, with the aſſiſtance of a bribe, and promiſes of much more, he prevailed on the fellow from whom the former paper was got, to betray the truſt of his employer, and ſteal the whole ballad.

The next thing was to make his honeſt acquiſition known to thoſe from whom he expected the reward of his pious pains. For this purpoſe, he waited upon his patron, and having

with difficulty gained acceſs to him, on repeated meſſages of important buſineſs, after the common cant of compliments, "I am come, "Sir (ſaid he) on an errand, that I know muſt "be agreeable to you, as it will afford a ſignal "opportunity of ſhowing your regard for religion and virtue."

"Heh! (anſwered his patron.) My regard for religion and virtue! What the Devil "does the fellow mean? What regard have I "ever ſhown for either, in word or action, that "ſhould put ſuch a thought in your head? If "you are come to preach to me, you ſhall ſoon "find the effects of your piety."———

"Pardon me, Sir; I know you better than "to be guilty of ſuch preſumption! What I "mean is this: Fortune has favoured me with "an opportunity of putting it into your power "to eſtabliſh ſuch a character; and as I know "moſt people are fond of the name, when it "can be obtained without the trouble of the "practice, I thought it my duty to acquaint "you with it; eſpecially, as it will enable you, "at the ſame time, to do a particular pleaſure "to your friends in power."

"Why, there may be ſomething in that, as "you ſay; but for the reſt, I care as little for "the name as I do for the practice; and would "not give myſelf a moment's trouble to get it; "ſo, be quick, and let me hear what you have "got

" got to ſay. I have *a match to ride* to-morrow " againſt a gentleman for a conſiderable wager, " and muſt ſee his groom this morning, in " order to *ſettle matters with him*; beſide which, I " have an aſſignation with his wife, who expects " me at this very time, ſo that I have not a " moment to loſe about religion and virtue."

My maſter, who knew him too well to attempt interfering with ſuch engagements, politely wiſhed him ſucceſs, and then gave him, in few words, an account of the whole affair, only reſerving to himſelf the honour of the thought, with which his patron was ſo pleaſed, that he promiſed to give him all the aſſiſtance in his power, *if it was only for the fun of the thing*.

Accordingly, as ſoon as he could ſpare time from his own weightier concerns he mentioned the matter to thoſe more immediately concerned in it, who embraced the project eagerly, and rewarded my maſter with moſt *liberal promiſes*, for his pains, of which they reſolved to take advantage, in order to cruſh a perſon, either hated or feared by every one among them.

In the attack made upon him, for this purpoſe, the principal part was undertaken by one, whoſe regard for religion and virtue was heightened by a motive not the moſt conſiſtent with either. This was the perſon who had been competitor with the culprit for *the higher order of the* MOCK-MONASTERY. In the account I gave you of

that curious tranſaction, I obſerved that he cheriſhed a ſecret grudge againſt the other, which was aggravated ſo violently by the diſgrace he ſuffered on that occaſion, that he had prevailed to have him expelled the ſociety*. Such an opportunity, therefore, as this, of completing his revenge, was not to be miſſed by one of his principles. Accordingly, though at the ſight of the ballad he knew it to be no more than a collection of the ſongs *which he had himſelf often bore a part in ſinging, at the monaſtery, and ſome of the worſt of which he had boaſted of being the authour of*, he inveighed againſt it with all the fervency and enthuſiaſtick zeal of a modern fanatick, and diſplayed the danger of letting ſuch an inſult upon every thing held ſacred go unpuniſhed, in ſuch ſtrong and affecting colours, as afforded high entertainment to all who heard him, and were acquainted with his life.

But all his eloquence would have proved ineffectual to make ſuch of his fraternity as were not, like him, ſtimulated by private motives, give the lie to their own practice in ſo flagrant a manner, as to cenſure the theory of it, had not ſome particular expreſſions happened to affect the honour of one of them; whom all the reſt of courſe eſpouſed; and *thus, for once, honour turned the ſcale in favour of virtue and religion, too light by themſelves*; and the ballad was condemned

* *Vol.* III.—*Page* 249.

demned, as tending to debauch the principles of the people, though it was ſufficiently known that it was not deſigned for publication, nor would ever have been heard of, had not this attack raiſed a curioſity about it.

Through the whole of this important tranſaction, my maſter performed his part moſt cleverly, ſtopping at nothing that was thought any way neceſſary to bring it to effect. As ſoon, therefore, as it was concluded, he prepared to receive the reward of his labour, the enjoyment of which he had anticipated in imagination in every ſhape it could be given.

But it was not long before he found his hopes had been too ſanguine. Inſtead of being rewarded immediately, as he had been made to expect, the job was ſcarce done, when he could perceive the ſmiles of favour grow cooler upon him, as often as he went to pay his court to his patrons, in order to keep them in mind of their promiſes. A ſtate of ſuch uncertainty, ſevere enough upon any, was not to be bor'n by one in his circumſtances. The expectations he had raiſed, in the height of his hopes, had opened the mouths of all his creditors upon him, with an importunity not to be quieted; beſide, that he had imbezzled ſome publick money entruſted to him, a demand for which he expected every day, and knew he could not ſhift off for a moment.

Driven almoſt to diſtraction by ſuch irreſiſtible neceſſity, he had no reſource, but to throw himſelf at the feet of the perſon who had appeared moſt ſanguine in the purſuit of his ſcheme, and conſequently been moſt liberal of his promiſes to him, and implore his aſſiſtance to extricate him from his accumulated diſtreſſes. But they who will moſt readily avail themſelves of villainy, always deteſt the villain. All the return he received was a cold profeſſion of concern; and a ſhameleſs excuſe of wanting that power to relieve him, which the caitiff ſuppliant well knew he had.

A new misfortune often lightens the weight of thoſe under which the mind was ſinking before, by rouſing it from liſtleſs dejection to an exertion of its powers. Such a diſappointment of his only hope ſhowed him all the horrours of his ſituation; and made him inſtantly *caſt about* how to eſcape from what he found he could not redreſs: inſtead, therefore, of betraying it by his looks, which he knew were watched, he aſſumed an air of uncommon ſpirits, and telling every one that he had got a poſitive aſſurance of receiving the promiſed reward without any further delay, he went to one of his tradeſmen, by that time he thought the news might have reached him, and taking up goods to a conſiderable amount, for which he confidently engaged to pay at a fixed and ſhort day, no ſooner got them into his poſſeſſion,

poſſeſſion, than he ſold them privately at half-price, and packing up whatever he could carry with him, fled beyond the reach of his creditors; and ſo proved how far his late conduct had proceeded, as he profeſſed, from his high regard to moral virtue and religion.

The agitation and horrours of his mind, from the time he had reſolved upon flight, till he had effected it, may be eaſily conceived. Whether the preſent ſafety it procured him gave him any laſting relief, I had not an opportunity of ſeeing, as *I quitted his ſervice*, at the inn where he took a poſt-chaiſe to get off; though it is moſt probable, that, after the firſt hurry of his ſpirits ſubſided, a ſenſe of the various villainies, by which he had brought himſelf to ſuch a ſtate of exile, imbittered the very bleſſing of liberty, and kept his mind in ſlavery, though his body was free.

CHAP. XI.

CHRYSAL *again changes his ſervice. His new maſter is obliged to pay expedition fees, to get over artificial delays. He and his miſtreſs ſet out on a long journey, to do what might have been better done at home.* CHRYSAL *makes ſome intereſting reflexions on a moſt important ſubject. Story of* CHRYSAL'*s maſter.* CHRYSAL *continues his reflexions on the ſame ſubject, which he conſiders in a further and moſt affecting point of view.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

MY late maſter had ſcarce decamped, when a young gentleman came into the inn, and ordering a *chaiſe and four* to be got ready with the utmoſt expedition, gave my new maſter a bank-note to pay for it, *in the change of which he received me.*

The anxiety which my *new* maſter expreſſed to have the grooms make haſte was a ſufficient reaſon for them to practiſe every delay they could deviſe, in order to extort expedition fees, at which they were ſo expert, that he was forced to give them almoſt as much as he paid for the chaiſe, before he could get it to ſtir.

When at length every thing was ſettled, he directed them to a particular place, where a hackney

hackney-coach waited for him, out of which he received a young lady, with a couple of ſmall bundles, and then bade the poſtillions drive on; but they had no ſooner got out of the town, than he changed his orders, and directed them to take another road. This occaſioned a new delay. The fellows alledged their being obliged to go where their maſter had ordered them, and no-where elſe; and made ſo many difficulties, that, as they expected, my maſter was compelled to purchaſe their compliance, at their own price.

All obſtacles being thus got over, he turned to the young lady, who ſat trembling and panting by his ſide, and embracing her tenderly, "Now, my deareſt love (ſaid he) all our fears are "over. Should we even be traced to the inn, "this turn will effectually baffle all purſuit."

"I wiſh it may (anſwered ſhe) but I ſhall "never think myſelf ſafe, till I am abſolutely "out of their reach, and all is over."

The converſation of lovers is agreeable only to themſelves! The reſt of their's for two days, as they flew rather than travelled (for which expedition they paid ſufficiently, every ſet of poſtillions giving the word to the next) will not bear repetition. As ſoon as they got to the end of their journey, they put an end to their moſt immediate fears alſo, by a marriage, which might have been performed with a much greater probability of ſucceſs at home, had not a poſitive law prevented it.

I ſee your ſurpriſe at my ſaying that a *poſitive law* prevented marriage, as the proſperity of the community depends in the firſt degree on the promotion of that ſtate. But ſo it happens in human affairs, that the true intereſt of the people is not always the firſt object of the laws made for their government.

Though too general experience confirms this remark, it is neceſſary to explain the particular circumſtance that gives occaſion to it, in this inſtance.

The firſt end of marriage is the propagation of the ſpecies, in the manner moſt agreeable to reaſon, and likely to produce the happineſs of the parties, as well as the population of the ſtate. As the paſſions which lead to this end are ſtrongeſt before reaſon has acquired ſtrength to direct them, it is neceſſary that they ſhould be ſubject to the direction of others, who may be better qualified to diſcern and promote their intereſt. This right of direction naturally belongs to thoſe who are moſt intimately concerned in that intereſt, as affecting a part of themſelves; and hence, among every people upon earth, however differing in other reſpects and cuſtoms, this right of directing matrimonial choice has always belonged to the parents; till maturity of age may be preſumed to ripen judgement, and ſo remove the neceſſity upon which it is founded.

But

But, however evident this right is, the paſſions of youth ſo often rebel againſt it, that it was found neceſſary to enforce it by expreſs laws. Theſe laws, though, the profeſſed end of which is to make marriage happy, ſhould never be perverted to the unnatural purpoſe of preventing it entirely, by clogging it with ſuch unneceſſary and unreaſonable reſtrictions, as tend to ſubjugate not only natural liberty, but alſo the higheſt intereſt of the ſtate, which depends upon population, to avarice, caprice, or pride of family in parents; or to views of intereſt in thoſe appointed to ſupply their place.

The particular caſe of my maſter, which gave occaſion to theſe reflexions, was this: He was the younger ſon of a noble family, to the honours of which his riſing virtues promiſed to add new luſtre. Youthful inclination had firſt attached him to this lady, whoſe merits upon acquaintance confirmed that attachment more than her very large fortune. Such a marriage could not fail to meet the approbation of reaſon and paternal prudence. Accordingly, every neceſſary preliminary was agreed upon, when the ſudden death of her father threw in legal obſtacles, which threatened to prevent it, at leaſt for a longer time than youthful impatience could bear. For, as he had not actually ſigned to his conſent, thoſe to whom the care of his daughter devolved thought proper to exert the right which the law

gave them of objecting to the diſparity between her fortune, and that of her lover, and ſo break off a match evidently for their mutual advantage.

When the lovers found that all they could do to influence their compliance was ineffectual, they had recourſe to this expedient (which the ſage makers of the law had, perhaps inadvertently, left open) to evade it, by flying beyond its power; and there ſolemnized a marriage, which ſhould be valid at their return home, though entered into without any of the prudential cautions for ſecuring happineſs, which are cuſtomary on ſuch occaſions, and he had in vain offered to come into; ſo that the law which was profeſſedly deſigned to prevent inconſiderate and unhappy marriages, in its effect deprived this, and the many marriages of the kind, of the means for procuring happineſs, which former laws, founded on reaſon, had provided for them.

It is not to be denied, but the evils which were immediately alledged as the occaſion of this law called aloud for remedy; but whether the remedy provided by it did not introduce an inconvenience of worſe conſequence to the publick than thoſe evils, is not ſo clear a caſe. Whatever reſtrictions might have been thought neceſſary, in worldly wiſdom, to prevent ſecret marriages, by which either the honours of families might be ſuppoſed to ſuffer diminution, or their fortunes fall a prey to mercenary deſign,

where

where theſe conſiderations interfere not, ſuch reſtrictions ſhould never, in good policy, extend.

On the contrary, every impediment and delay, *not immediately proceeding from moral neceſſity*, ſhould be removed; and the ſtate of matrimony encouraged by ſuch honours and advantages as ſhould counterbalance the inconveniences of it to perſons labouring under circumſtances of indigence; by which means, the inferiour ranks of the people, whoſe numbers make the ſtrength of a ſtate, would be delivered from the difficulties and fears which at preſent deter them from entering into matrimony, to the heavy loſs of the community, and the immediate ruin of ſuch numbers of both ſexes, whoſe natural paſſions, debarred from this, their only proper reſource, lead them into ſuch vices, as defeat the end of their creation, and make them a reproach to humanity. How many infants would daily be ſaved from the moſt unnatural murther, to the ornament and advantage of their country, could the wretched parents have ſaved their own ſhame by marriage? How many females, who offer themſelves in the highways to brutal proſtitution, periſhing with cold, hunger, and diſeaſe, might have been the happy mothers of many children, and performed all the duties of their ſtation in virtuous eſteem, had not their being hindered from marrying, *by impediments made by law*, betrayed them to deſtruction?

As

As ſoon as my maſter had thus accompliſhed the end of his journey, he ſet out on his return, to enjoy the fruits of it at home. But I continued not in his poſſeſſion to ſee much of that mutual happineſs which his marriage promiſed, *being borrowed* from him on the road, by a gentleman of his acquaintance, who had been bubbled out of all his money at a horſe-race, and was now *fighting his way* to town, by running in debt at every inn, and raiſing contributions thus on all he met, of whom he had the leaſt knowledge.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL's *new maſter ſtrikes out an adventure. He is ſmitten with a girl in a travelling-waggon, and changes his appearance, to get admiſſion to her. Account of the company in the waggon. A good-natured miſtake of one of the paſſengers gives occaſion to a broil, which is put an end to by an accident that does not mend the matter.*

DISTRESSING as ſuch a ſituation would have been to another, cuſtom had made it ſo familiar to my *new* maſter, that he thought nothing of it, but travelled on with his equipages, as unconcerned, and ready to engage in any mad freak, as if his pockets were full of money. Nor was he long without an opportunity of indulging his diſpoſition.

As he was rolling careleſsly along, his chariot was ſtopped in a narrow part of the road, by one of thoſe travelling waggons, whoſe unwieldy weight gives them the privilege of taking place of their betters. Such a circumſtance naturally made the travellers in *both carriages* look out, when he was ſtruck with the uncommon beauty of a young creature in the waggon, whoſe charms in the firſt opening of their bloom, gave ſcope to imagination to paint a proſpect, if poſſible beyond their preſent perfection.

Such

Such temptation could ſcarce be reſiſted by one who had reaſoned his paſſions into the beſt ſubjection, much leſs by him, who blindly obeyed them in, or rather ſtimulated them to their utmoſt exceſs. He no ſooner ſaw, therefore, than he reſolved to *have* her by any means. The firſt thing to be done, for this pious purpoſe, was to change his appearance, in order to get into her company, as the leaſt ſuſpicion of his rank would directly *blow* his deſign. But this was no difficulty. He was well accuſtomed to lay it down; and the meaneſt character in life ſat as naturally upon him as his own.

Accordingly, as ſoon as his chariot paſſed the waggon, he drove on furiouſly, till he was out of ſight, when he alighted, and changing clothes with one of his ſervants out of livery, ordered them to leave the great road, and wait for him at an inn, ſome miles diſtance acroſs the country.

Thus equipped for his enterpriſe, he walked on leiſurely, like a common traveller, till he was over-taken by the waggon, the driver of which *plied* him in the uſual way to take a place, which after ſome affected difficulties he agreed to. But the greateſt difficulty aroſe not from him. The waggon was already ſo full, that when the driver mentioned taking in another, the paſſengers all cried out againſt it with one voice. But his authority was too abſolute to be reſiſted. He

fixed

fixed his ladder, and ordered them to make room, barely condeſcending to ſay that it was for a gentleman who had been taken ſuddenly ill, and wanted to go only to the next village. This circumſtance, though treated with brutal diſregard by the reſt, had an immediate effect upon the tender diſpoſition of his deſtined prey, who ſqueezing cloſer to her mother, he crept into his neſt, and ſettled himſelf as conveniently as he could next to her in the ſtraw.

The company into which he had thus thruſt himſelf ſeemed to be a repreſentative of all the heteroclite characters of the age. Beſide the young female, whoſe appearance had attracted him, and her mother, a plain, good-looking woman, it conſiſted of a mountebank-doctor, and his zany, a methodiſt-preacher, a ſtrolling-actor and actreſs, a fat ale-wife, a ſervant-maid, who was going to *London* to repair a cracked reputation, a recruiting-ſerjeant, and two recruits, an outlawed ſmuggler, and a broken exciſeman.

Though my maſter could not, at firſt view, diſtinguiſh all their different characters, ſome of them were ſo ſtrongly marked, that he promiſed himſelf the higheſt entertainment from the claſhing which he concluded muſt inevitably ariſe in ſuch a groupe, and was reſolved to promote, upon the firſt occaſion. But an accident ſoon gave him that pleaſure, without the trouble of planning for it.

As

As the weather was warm, and few of the company could be ſuſpected of the delicacy of changing their clothes often, it may be ſuppoſed that every ſavour which aroſe among them was not purely aromatick. My maſter had not been many minutes in his place, when the various odours fuming round him had ſuch an effect upon his ſenſes, that he undeſigningly breathed a wiſh for a bottle of *ſpirits*.

As he had been introduced under the pretence of being ſick, the ale-wife, who happened to be near him, miſtook his meaning, and thought he wanted a *dram*, not once dreaming of any other uſe of ſpirits. Pulling out a flaſk, therefore, from under her coat, in the height of good-nature, "Spirits! (ſaid ſhe) they are poiſonous "ſtuff. Here is what will do you more good "by half!"—Then drawing the cork, and taking a ſup, to ſhow him that it was not poiſon, "Drink ſome of this," (continued ſhe, reaching him the flaſk) "and I'll warrant it will "*ſettle* you. It is right *Hollands*."——

Before my maſter had time either to accept or refuſe her offer, the actor, who ſat between them, *ſmoaked* her miſtake, and intercepting the bottle, as ſhe reached acroſs him, cried out in triumph,

"Bravo, my queen! your gin, from *Holland* pure,
"My ſtomach ſooner than his head will cure."——

Then taking a large *go-down* or two, "*Here*,
"*Belvidera*,"

" *Belvidera*," (added he, giving the bottle to the actreſs) " *in this friendly cup drown all your* " *ſorrows!—Drink, as you love me, deep.*"——

His faithful mate could not diſobey ſuch a command. She took the bottle, and lifting it to her head, " *Thus to the bottom* (ſaid ſhe) " *though it were a mile!*"

But ſhe was interrupted in her intention by the ſmuggler, who lay at her feet, and no ſooner ſmelt the dear liquour, than he raiſed his head, and perceiving what ſhe was about, " Avaſt " haling there," (cried he, ſnatching the bottle from her mouth) " or you'll pump the ſcupper " dry."—And then going to put it to his own, " Hold," (ſaid the exciſeman, catching his hand with the ſame deſign) " I ſeiſe this in the " King's name, till I know whether it has paid " duty."

The mention of the word *duty* ſet the ſmuggler's blood on fire. " Duty! you ſhark!" (ſaid he, graſping the bottle faſter, and catching him in return by the throat with the other hand) " I'll ſeiſe you! damn my eyes, and limbs! " I'll pay you the duty, if you don't looſe your " hold this moment, you ſcoundrel! that I will."

Though he griped the exciſeman's throat ſo hard, that he could not return his compliment in words, he ſcorned to yield the prize without one effort. Giving a twiſt, therefore, with all his force, to wreſt it out of his antagoniſt's hand,

though

though he could not ſucceed, he prevailed ſo far as to turn the mouth of the bottle downwards, by which means the contents were poured full in the face of the ſerjeant, who lay ſnoring, on his back, with his mouth wide open.

Welcome as ſuch a gueſt would have been in a proper manner, the intruſion thus unexpectedly was not ſo agreeable. He ſtarted up, half ſuffocated; and belching his doſe full in the face of one of the recruits, "Blood anouns! fire and "fury! (ſputtered he.) What's the meaning of "all this?"

Juſt as he ſaid this, one of the wheels of the waggon came into a deep hole, with ſuch a plump, that though it did not abſolutely overſet, it tumbled all the paſſengers on top of one another; and inſtantly put a ſtop to the cries of the ale-wife, for the loſs of her liquour.

The ſcreams, oaths, and execrations of the whole company, on this occaſion, would have given my maſter the higheſt delight, had he not been rather too nearly concerned to enjoy the *fun*, the fat ale-wife being thrown ſo full upon him, that he was unable to ſtir, though almoſt ſmothered, ſo that he could not help adding his cries to the concert.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL's maſter experiences ſome comfortable conſequences from the obliging diſpoſition of the waggoner. He purſues his deſign, by paying common civility to his miſtreſs's mother. Converſation and behaviour of the company. CHRYSAL's *maſter, in the purſuit of his deſign, meets an adventure that cools his paſſion, and reaſſembles the company, when they are all like to be at a fault, till one of them luckily hits off the ſcent.*

WHEN the driver had got his waggon out of the hole, and ſeen that all was ſafe about it, he came to know what was the matter with his paſſengers; and having *unpacked* them, my maſter had the pleaſure to hear the young woman propoſe to her mother to walk a little way, till ſome, not the moſt agreeable, conſequences of the late diſaſter ſhould blow off, to which ſhe readily conſented, as he prepared to accompany them, both for the ſame reaſon, and in order to have an opportunity of making an acquaintance, which he found he could not ſo well do in the waggon.

But the waggoner was not in the humour to give them that indulgence. When they called to him to let them down, he anſwered ſurlily, that they

they had not above a couple of miles to their inn; and if they were to ſtop thus every moment, he ſhould not get in, in time, and ſo without any further ceremony whipped on his horſes. This was a ſevere diſappointment to my maſter, who ſoon grew ſo ſick, that he could not hold up his head all the reſt of the way.

But the qualms of his ſtomach did not affect his conſcience, ſo as to make him in the leaſt alter his deſign. On his arrival at the inn, he made a pretence of the compaſſion which the young girl and her mother had expreſſed for him, to attach himſelf particularly to them, and ply them with wine, by way of return, which falſe modeſty made the mother take ſo freely, as gave him good hopes of ſucceſs.

The converſation and behaviour at ſupper was ſtrictly in the character of the company. The methodiſt made a long grace, and talked of religion and temperance, while he eat more than any two at the table, and his eyes were gloating at the ſervant-maid, his fellow-traveller, who ſeemed to liſten to him with great complacency and attention. The actor mimicked the methodiſt to his face, and lolled out his tongue at every one elſe, as they happened to look another way. The actreſs ſpoke in heroicks, and turned up her noſe at every thing and every body. The ſmuggler and exciſeman ſat growling at each other, as if they meant to make a further

further trial of their manhood. The ſerjeant talked of his exploits in the wars, and proved his valour by an oath at every word, which his two pupils liſtened to with looks of admiration, that ſhowed they deſigned to imitate that part of his example at leaſt. The ale-wife lamented the loſs of her gin, which, ſhe ſaid, ſhe could not replace with any like it, on the whole road. In ſhort, every body eat and talked; and talked and eat together, except the girl and her mother, who were quite loſt in aſtoniſhment, at a ſcene ſo new to them, and my maſter, whoſe thoughts were too much taken up with his own ſcheme, to mind any thing elſe.

Accordingly, he ſtepped out, when ſupper was ended, and engaging the chamber-maid in his intereſt, by a preſent of half a crown, ſhe ſhowed him where his miſtreſs was to lie, and promiſed to ſettle all things in the manner moſt convenient to his deſigns, by putting her and her mother in the bed next to the door, there being two in the room, and placing in the other the ſervant-maid, who paid for a bed to herſelf, as her modeſty would not permit her to ſleep with a ſtranger.

As ſoon as the houſe was quiet, and my maſter thought the wine which he had forced upon the mother had ſecured her, he got up, and ſtealing in his ſhirt to the door of their chamber, found it open, upon which he entered and crept

to

to the bed, where he expected to find his miſtreſs, without ever conſidering what muſt be the conſequence of ſurpriſing her in ſuch a manner. Opening the curtains, therefore, ſoftly, to feel, by the difference of ſize, on which ſide ſhe lay, he had ſcarce put his hand upon the clothes, when it was ſeiſed and griped ſo hard, that he ſoon loſt all thought of every thing but diſengaging himſelf.

For this purpoſe, he made two or three efforts, but finding them ineffectual, and provoked at the pain his hand ſuffered in the ſtruggle, he diſcharged a blow with the other full in the face of his antagoniſt, who ſpringing directly out of bed, returned it with ſuch uſury, that my poor maſter fell ſprawling on the floor, where he roared out murther with all his might, in which he was immediately joined by thoſe who lay in the other bed, whoſe cries not only raiſed the houſe to his re[illegible]ue, but alſo ſaved him from further violence, his antagoniſt deſiſting to beat him, in order to make his retreat in time.

When thoſe who lay neareſt were aſſembled at the door, half clad, and worſe armed with whatever they could catch up in their confuſion, prudential regard to perſonal ſafety made them all ſtop ſhort, every one finding ſome pretence to excuſe himſelf from going in firſt, and preſſing the poſt of honour upon his neighbour, till they at length raiſed their fears ſo high, that it

was uncertain whether any one would venture in before day-light, though the cries ſtill continued, had not the ſmuggler, who did not wake to join them at firſt, put an end to the debate. "Damn you all" (ſaid he, ſnatching a candle from one, and a poker from another) "for a "pack of cowardly lubbers! Will you ſtand "*jawing* here, while the people are murthering?" Then ruſhing in, "Hallo! (continued he) "what's going forward here, in the Devil's "name?"——

The firſt object that preſented itſelf to his view, when he entered, was my maſter, who was ſtill upon the ground, unable, between fright and beating, to ariſe. Advancing to him, therefore, "Hip, meſſmate!" (ſaid he, giving him a kick on his naked poſteriours) "what cheer? "Speak, if you are alive!"——

The enterance of light reſtoring my maſter to ſome ſpirit, he raiſed his head at this ſalute, and making an effort to get up, "I ſcarce know "whether I am or not (anſwered he) I have been "ſo beaten by that bitch of *Babel*; but ſhe "ſhall pay for it, if I ever recover."

The place where he was found directing this accuſation to the perſon in that bed, while ſome of them helped him up, the reſt gathered round it, and aſked the ſervant-maid, who lay there, what had induced her to treat the gentleman in ſuch a manner? But the mention of

her name ſaved her the trouble of a reply. Before ſhe could ſpeak, "It was not ſhe!" (exclaimed my maſter) "I mean the old Beldam, "mother to the young Witch, whoſe baby-face "brought me among you, and who lay in this "bed. It was ſhe who abuſed me thus; or "rather ſome porter in woman's clothes, who "paſſed for her, for no woman ever had ſuch "ſtrength."——

"I believe you muſt be miſtaken, Sir" (interpoſed the exciſeman) "the people you mean "are lying quietly in the next bed, and ſeem to "be as much frighted as you are hurt."——

"How! (returned my maſter) did they not "lie in this bed, next the door?"——

"No (anſwered the other) Mrs. *Margery* "lies here, as grave and demure as a whore "at a chriſtening."——

"Then the jade of a chamber-maid played "me a trick (replied my maſter.) But who the "Devil lay with her? For I am ſure ſhe was "never able to do what I have ſuffered."——

"As for that!" (ſaid the actor, who had all the while been peeping round the bed) "I believe it will be no hard matter to find it "out. Theſe breeches (pulling a pair from under the bolſter) muſt belong to ſome-"body, and will certainly point out her bed-"fellow, if the lady, like a true Amazon, did "not wear them herſelf."——

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

The advantage of a ready aſſurance. The methodiſt accounts curiouſly for what he has done; and turning the tables upon CHRYSAL's *maſter charges him with robbery, who is thereupon obliged to diſcover himſelf, but is contradicted by one of the company, who boaſts of a curious acquaintance with him in his own character. He is luckily recognized by a footman, whoſe maſter extricates him from his diſtreſs, and makes out the miſtakes that had cauſed ſo much confuſion.*

AS the breeches were immediately known to belong to the methodiſt, they marched away directly to his bedſide, for he had not joined them, and aſked him how he had come to uſe the gentleman in that inhuman manner, ſhowing him my maſter, whom they had dragged along with them.

"Who I?" (anſwered the methodiſt, affecting all the ſurpriſe of innocence, and determined to deny what he thought could not be proved) "Heaven forbid that I ſhould uſe any fellow "chriſtian ill. I engage not in ſuch broils. "My warfare is with the ſpirit."——

"And ſometimes with the fleſh, too, I be-"lieve, doctor! (interrupted the actor.) Nay,

" it is in vain to deny it! Do you know theſe
" breeches, doctor?"

" Breeches!" (exclaimed he, ſtarting up in real affright, and fumbling under his bolſter) " Oh they are gone! they are gone! I am rob-
" bed, ruined, and undone!"——

" No, doctor; they are not gone, as you
" ſee! but the queſtion is, how they came
" under the young woman's bed's-head, where
" this gentleman received this abuſe."——

" Let him anſwer that!" (replied the methodiſt, never at a loſs for an impudent lie.) " Let him anſwer that! all I know of the mat-
" ter is this: being diſturbed in my reſt, I
" then knew not, but now plainly perceive by
" what cauſe, I aroſe to pray, as is my cuſtom,
" when hearing ſomebody go ſoftly out of the
" room, I watched, as was my duty, to prevent
" any evil, and following the footſteps into
" another chamber caught a man in the very
" fact of attempting the virtue of ſome fe-
" male, who lay there; upon which, expoſtu-
" lating with him upon the heinouſneſs of ſuch
" a crime, he flew at me ſo furiouſly that I
" could ſcarce defend myſelf from him, and if
" in the fray he received any hurt, he muſt
" charge it to himſelf, as he was the aggreſſor:
" but this is not the whole; I now perceive,
" that I was diſturbed out of my ſleep by his
" ſtealing my breeches from under my head,

" which

" which he accordingly took with him into the " room of that damſel, and therefore I demand " juſtice againſt him for the attempt, as well " as for any loſs I may have ſuffered."——

Saying this, he took his breeches out of the actor's hand, and ſearching the pockets, " It " is too true!" (continued he, gnaſhing his teeth, and wringing his hands, in a perfect agony.) " It is too true! I am ruined and undone! " I am robbed of all the money which I had " collected in my pilgrimage to relieve the poor " of the Lord. Twenty golden guineas, beſide " ſilver, and other monies. Let him be ſearch- " ed: let every body be ſearched this moment. " I muſt have my money! I muſt have my " money!"——

As my maſter was a ſtranger to them all; and not bleſſed with a face that could beſpeak much favour, they began to give credit to the charge againſt him, eſpecially, as the ſervant-maid corroborated it, by ſaying that he had alſo been rummaging for her pockets, when that worthy gentleman interrupted him (for women and all were now gathered to hear the matter canvaſſed) and talked of carrying him before a magiſtrate in the morning, that he might be ſent to jail.

At another time, ſuch a ſcene would have given him the higheſt pleaſure, but he had no taſte for *fun* now. Enraged, therefore, at the iniquity of ſuch a charge, and the inſolence

with which they were proceeding to treat him, "Unhand me, at your perils, you ſcoundrels" (ſaid he, telling them who he was.) "Unhand "me, this moment. As for that infamous "villain, and his trull, I charge you to ſecure "them directly, and ſend in my name for a "magiſtrate. I'll make examples of them, at "leaſt."

You may conceive with what ſurpriſe they were all ſtruck at hearing this. However, as he gave only his bare word for it, all were not equally ready to believe him. "You, my "friend *Scapegrace!*" (ſaid the actor, coming and looking him full in the face.) No! no! Sir: "ſay that to thoſe who don't know him. I "am his intimate companion; his choſen "among ten thouſand. There is not a fine "girl upon the town but we have *bilked*; nor "an houſe in the *hundred of Drury* where we "have *not kicked up a duſt* together. He and I "are *Pylades* and *Oreſtes*; ſworn friends and "brothers. No! no! that ſtroke won't paſs "upon me."

This made matters worſe than ever with my maſter, adding ridicule to inſult, which was poured upon him in ſuch torrents from every mouth, that he could not ſpeak a word in his own defenſe. But his diſtreſs laſted not long. The ſervants of a gentleman who luckily happened to lie at the inn that night, being raiſed by the uproar,

uproar, one of them knew my maſter, through all his diſguiſes. "By your leave, there!" (ſaid he, ruſhing through the crowd, and ſhoving aſide ſome of them, who had already laid hold of him.) "Are you all mad, to uſe a gen-"tleman in this manner?"—Then addreſſing himſelf to my maſter, "What is the matter, "pleaſe your honour? I am ſorry to ſee your "honour in ſuch a pickle. My maſter (nam-"ing him) is in the houſe, and will do you "juſtice. I'll run, and call him up directly."

Such a teſtimony inſtantly turned the ſcale, and made thoſe who were moſt inſolent to him before, now moſt officious to pay him reſpect and attendance. Accordingly, he was removed, without aſking his leave, into his own room, where they were preparing to humanize his appearance, when the gentleman entered.

Much as my maſter was above the weakneſs of ſhame, he could not avoid feeling ſomething like it, on being caught in ſuch a condition. He was ſitting on the ſide of the bed, covered only with the ragged remains of his ſhirt, which had been torn to pieces in the fray, daubed all over with blood and dirt, and beaten to ſuch a degree, that he ſcarce retained one feature of the *human face divine*, which had not loſt all likeneſs of the original.

The gentleman ſtarted at ſuch a ſpectacle, and ſtopped ſhort, in doubt whether it could be he, till my maſter's voice ſatisfied him: when he

gave orders to have every one concerned in the affair ſecured, and then ſeeing the poor ſufferer taken proper care of, and put to bed, he proceeded to enquire into the matter, the circumſtances of which appeared to be theſe:

The methodiſt having agreed with the ſervant-maid, his fellow-traveller, to have ſome *ſpiritual* converſation with her that night, ſhe promiſed to lie in the bed next the door, and, therefore, after the chamber-maid had aſſigned them their quarters, as ſhe had ſettled with my maſter, feigned ſome pretence to deſire a change, which the others readily conſented to. Accordingly, as the methodiſt was ſecure of his reception, he came ſoon, and was got into bed to his *diſciple*, when my maſter made his attempt, whoſe hand he ſeiſed, in the manner I have related; and would have beaten him ſtill more ſeverely for his intruſion, had it not been for his crying out, upon which he retreated to his own bed, in ſuch a hurry, to eſcape detection, that he forgot his breeches, which he had taken with him, for fear ſome of his chamber-fellows ſhould ſearch them, and rob him of eight or ten guineas, that he had picked up in the courſe of his preaching about the country, and the actor had made bold to take as lawful prize, when they fell into his hands, and afterwards found means to convey to his wife, for more ſecurity.

Every thing being thus cleared up, the gentleman adviſed my maſter to drop the affair, as

proſecuting

proſecuting it would only expoſe him ſtill more, to which he willingly agreed, having no inclination for any further trouble about it.

The methodiſt, though, was far from being ſo eaſily pacified for the loſs of the fruits of his ſummer's labour in the vineyard, which he thought worſe of than a thouſand beatings, and was reſolved to recover if poſſible, in ſpite of all their ſcoffs and inſults. But the detection of the other part of his ſtory had ſo entirely deſtroyed his credit, that he found it in vain to perſiſt, eſpecially as the actor offered to make oath that he had that very evening applied to him, to borrow a ſhilling to pay his reckoning. Curſing them all, therefore, in the bitterneſs of his ſoul, he changed his route, and went upon another preaching progreſs, in order to retrieve his loſs, in which pious work he prevailed upon his diſciple and fellow-ſufferer in ſhame, the ſervant-maid, whoſe pockets had eſcaped the pillagers, to accompany him.

By this time the waggon was ready to ſet out, when the reſt of the company departed, except the actor and his lady, who were ſo tired of that vulgar way of travelling, that they thought proper to continue their journey in the ſtage-coach; and my maſter, who was laid up in ſalves and flannels, had loſt both ability and inclination to purſue his enterpriſe any farther.

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL *gives a ſtriking account of his maſter. He arrives in* London, *and pays a viſit to his miſtreſs. His curious method of courting. His miſtreſs makes him a preſent of half her fortune beforehand, in return for which he promiſes to marry her next day, and then goes to his girl. Difference in his behaviour to the two naturally accounted for. An uncommon gueſt at a wedding, with as uncommon a manner of celebrating a nuptial-night, ſhow a ſtill more uncommon inſtance of matrimonial complaiſance.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THE ſingularity of my maſter's character gave me a curioſity to take a view of his life, while he was ſleeping off ſome of the effects of his late adventure. He was born in a rank, that ſupported the fair hopes of honour and advantage, which the firſt opening of his youth univerſally raiſed. But an errour in his education blaſted all thoſe hopes in the bud, and drove him into every extreme of vice and folly, which it was deſigned to guard againſt.

The bad conſequences which are ſeen to attend indulging the paſſions too far, often lead weak minds to attempt ſuppreſſing them entirely, without

without conſidering that the crime is only in the exceſs. The difficulty and pain of this attempt throws ſuch a gloom over the whole appearance, as hides the native beauty of virtue, and makes it ſeem to be the ſource of unhappineſs, to thoſe who view it only in theſe effects, ſo as to terrify them from the purſuit of it.

On this errour pretended enthuſiaſts have in every age founded their influence, by enſlaving the mind to groundleſs terrours, which they never fail to turn to their own advantage. To the conduct of ſuch blind and baſe guides, the mother of my maſter, to whom the ſole care of his education had fallen by the death of her huſband, implicitly reſigned herſelf, and of courſe her ſon, in return for which they flattered her fanaticiſm, and vanity together, with promiſes of breeding him up in the perfection of ſanctity.

For this purpoſe, he was debarred from every innocent recreation, and harraſſed with ſtudies improper for his age. His appetites were mortified by faſting; his reſt was broken to chaunt hymns, and pray; nor was he allowed even to ſpeak but in ſcripture-phraſe; and all as the indiſpenſible duties of virtue and religion.

Such a ſlavery naturally gave him ſo great an averſion to every thing that bore their names, that the moment he became his own maſter, he placed the ſupreme pleaſure of his life in acting in contradiction to them, by every inſtance of

expenſive and vicious exceſs, in which he ſquandered away the inheritance of his anceſtors, and broke his conſtitution with a rapidity, that gave ſcandal to vice, put folly out of countenance, and made his name a by-word in an age of exceſſes. And in this ſituation he was, when I came into his poſſeſſion.

Though it was near noon before he awoke, the gentleman whoſe preſence had ſo luckily relieved him the night before waited to ſee him, when he completed his kindneſs, by lending him money to defray his expenſes up to town, upon which he ſent for his equipage, and ſet off without further concern at what had happened.

On his arrival in *London*, he drove directly to the laſt place which any other man in his circumſtances would have thought of going to. This was the houſe of a lady of large fortune, to which he had paid his addreſſes, ſince his extravagance had diſſipated his own; and with this peculiar honeſty, that he never even pretended a regard to herſelf.

The ſucceſs of ſuch a courtſhip muſt appear improbable, but there is no accounting for the caprice of woman. She had taken a liking to him, which ſeemed to riſe in proportion to the ſlights he ſhowed her, and was reſolved to gratify, if only nominally, for ſhe could expect no more, at the hazard of every happineſs of life.

It may be ſuppoſed that the ſight of him, in ſuch a condition, ſtruck her ſeverely. She flew

to

to him, threw her arms around his neck, and bemoaned his misfortune in the moſt paſſionate terms. But that was not what he wanted. Shaking her off, without feigning the leaſt return to her fondneſs, "Pſha! (ſaid he) leave "off this ſtuff; and let me know whether you "have got the money I told you I ſhould want "to pay off thoſe debts of honour! If you have, "and will alſo give me up the reſt of your "fortune without reſerve, I'll marry you."—

"Will you? (exclaimed ſhe, in rapture) "then you have it, if it were ten times as "much. Here it is" (opening a bureau, and reaching him a handful of bank-notes) "I *ſold* "*out* half my fortune to raiſe it, the very day "you ſpoke to me." ——

"I wiſh I had known that" (ſaid he, putting the notes in his pocket) "and then I might "have made my excurſion into the country "longer. Farewell! I'll call upon you to-"morrow-evening, and conclude the job. Do "you have the hangman and halter ready."—

"What do you mean? I don't underſtand "you."——

"What ſhould I mean but the parſon and "the ring. Is not that an halter? And does "he not hang us up with it for life?"——

"But, can't you ſtay a few moments! I "want to know how you came in that con-"dition!"

"It

"It was only a ſcrape about a wench. I'll "tell you the particulars another time. My "girl would not forgive me, if ſhe knew I was "ſo long in town, without going to her."—

"But will you certainly come to-morrow? "I am afraid you will diſappoint me, now you "have got what you wanted."——

"Never fear! I have not got what I want, "while you have a ſhilling left in the world."— Saying which he walked away, without deigning to take any further leave.

But his behaviour was not ſo cavalier, where he was going. The moment he entered his miſtreſs's room, ſhe flew at him, not with the fondneſs of a dove. "So! (ſaid ſhe) what "bawdy-houſe have you been breaking up, "now? You do well to come to me in ſuch a "pickle; but I'll ſee you damn'd, before I take "the trouble of nurſing you."

"Don't be in a paſſion, my love" (ſaid he, taking her in his arms, and giving her a kiſs.) "It is no ſuch thing. I fell among a gang of "foot-pads, who abuſed me in this manner, "becauſe I made reſiſtance."——

"A very likely ſtory, truely, invented, I "ſuppoſe, to excuſe your not bringing me "money! but if that is the caſe, you may go "to the Devil, from whence you came. I'll "not be troubled with your company."——

"No, my dear! I never come to you empty-"handed, let me do as I will elſewhere"—

With

With which words, he pulled out one of the bank-notes he had juſt got from the other, and giving it to her, put her at length in a good-humour.

I ſee your indignation at a man's acting in ſuch a manner; but you could expect no other. The ſame baſeneſs of temper which could treat the other woman with inſult naturally ſubmitted to be inſulted by this.

You imagine that his miſtreſs muſt have uncommon attractions, to give her ſuch power over him! You judge right. Her's were uncommon, indeed. She had loſt her hair and teeth in a ſalivation: and was allowed to be the moſt profligate of her profeſſion; charms ſufficient to attach a man of his taſte.

My maſter having thus happily made his peace, the loving couple ſat down to their bottle, as uſual, over which happening to mention his intended marriage the next day, her delicacy took ſuch offenſe, that ſhe poſitively refuſed to conſent to it, till he promiſed not only that ſhe ſhould be preſent, but alſo to return and ſpend his wedding-night with her, to prove her triumph over the happy bride.

Accordingly, he took her with him the next evening, and introducing her to the expecting fair one, "I have brought my girl (ſaid he) to "grace our nuptials. The dear creature in-"ſiſted upon it; and you know I can't refuſe "her

"her any thing." The bride elect was ſo enraptured at the thought of her approaching happineſs, that ſhe had no ſenſe of the inſult, but received her with politeneſs, perhaps not without a mixture of pride, on the occaſion.

There are ſome ſcenes, the extravagance of which *beggars deſcription.* I ſhall, therefore, only ſay, that the behaviour of the company was in character during the ceremony and entertainment, at the end of which, the bridegroom alledging his promiſe to go back with his miſtreſs, the convenient bride not only conſented; but alſo propoſed preparing an apartment for her in her own houſe, to ſave him that trouble for the future, and procure for herſelf the pleaſure of his company—a ſcheme that was actually carried into execution, while ſhe had a houſe to receive her; which was not very long, a continuance of the ſame extravagance that had diſſipated his own fortune ſoon diſſipating her's alſo.

It may be imagined that I did not remain long in the poſſeſſion of ſuch a maſter. He *loſt me* the next evening after his marriage, on a bet that he could repeat the *Lord's Prayer*, which he laid on purpoſe to loſe, in order to prove how entirely he had got rid of the prejudices of education.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome reflexions, not likely to be much regarded. His maſter pays a love-viſit to a young lady, whoſe father interpoſes unpolitely, and makes ſome out-of-the-way objections.* CHRYSAL'S *maſter hits upon a ſcheme for getting over them. He propoſes marriage on certain terms, which are agreed to, and the day fixed at a little diſtance.*

I Have, on former occaſions, given you a ſufficient deſcription how *people of faſhion* ſpend their time in gaming-houſes, where, though every meeting produces new misfortunes to ſome of the company, there is ſuch a ſameneſs in the manner, as will not bear repetition, and muſt cloy any creature not abſolutely under infatuation, or obliged to make a trade of it for bread, as neither of which was the caſe of my *new* maſter, he left the company early, to purſue pleaſures more in his own taſte.

In no inſtance are the contradictions in human conduct ſo ſtrongly ſhown, as in that of man to woman. He who would loſe his life rather than violate the ſtricteſt principles of honour or honeſty (as they are abſurdly diſtinguiſhed from each other) in his intercourſe with another man, not only ſcruples not to ſtudy deceit,

deceit, and practice the blackeſt and baſeſt villainies againſt woman; but will even glory in the ſucceſs of them, when accompliſhed, without ſhowing remorſe in himſelf, or meeting reproof from others.

The reaſon of this is generally ſaid to be man's partiality to his own cauſe, which as he has the power of judging in his hands, whether by uſurpation or right it matters not, makes him pardon in others the crime he would be glad to commit himſelf.

But, without exculpating him in the leaſt, woman bears a heavy ſhare in the blame of her ſex's ruin. I mean not here by her immediate conſent in her own caſe, but by the countenance which ſhe ſhows to the perpetrators of it, in that of others; it being as certain in fact, as it is groſs and abſurd to thought, that the ſureſt recommendation to the general favour of women is the fame of having ruined numbers of them.

Whether this proceeds from a vain ambition of triumphing over the triumpher, or an affectation of diſdaining to eſpouſe the cauſe of the fallen, as having forfeited the common regards of humanity, makes no difference in the conſequence, whatever it may in the crime, as it opens an opportunity to the ſpoiler to extend his conqueſts often upon themſelves, in the midſt of their ſecurity; whereas, would women ſhow a true ſenſe of the honour of their ſex, by refuſing

fuſing every kind of intercourſe with ſuch as had ever violated it, man's partiality to himſelf would loſe its effect, and all his deſigns upon them be reſtrained within the proper boundaries of virtue.

From the place where I came into the poſſeſſion of my *new* maſter, he went to pay a viſit to a young lady of uncommon beauty and merit, whom he was violently in love with; that is, he was earneſtly bent upon gratifying his deſire for her, at the expenſe of her ruin; an enterpriſe for which he was eminently qualified, being poſſeſſed of all the advantages of youth, fortune, and addreſs, and abſolutely free from every reſtraint of principle, as he had proved on ſeveral ſucceſsful occaſions of the ſame kind. The reception he met ſhowed that he had made an intereſt in her heart; but all his experience in the ſcience of intrigue could not elude the vigilance of her virtue for a moment, nor find the leaſt opening for any attack upon her honour.

Such difficulties only redoubled his ardour. As he was conſidering, therefore, next morning, how he ſhould proceed, he was interrupted in his meditations, by a viſit from his miſtreſs's father. After ſome time ſpent in common chat, "I have "taken the liberty to wait upon you, Sir, "(ſaid the father) about an affair, the importance "of which to my happineſs will apologize, "for any ſeeming unpoliteneſs in it. I have

"for

" for ſome time taken notice of the frequency " of your viſits to my houſe, the honour of " which I am juſtly ſenſible of, but not ſo far " dazzled by, but I can ſee the motive of them " through it; and, therefore, muſt for many " reaſons beg leave to deſire that you will diſ- " continue them."

" I—I—I don't underſtand you, Sir;" (anſwered my maſter, a good deal diſconcerted at ſo unexpected an addreſs.) " I have no motive " that I deſire to conceal, or is any way incon- " ſiſtent with the character of a gentleman."

" Pardon me, Sir (replied the other) I mean " no ſuch thing. But yet, what may be thought " conſiſtent with that character in ſome things " may be very inconſiſtent with the happineſs of " a father. To be plain, Sir, I am not ſo un- " acquainted with the world, but I can ſee that " all your viſits are paid to my daughter! and " as ſhe is not upon a level with you, either in " family or fortune, for a wife, I muſt repeat " my requeſt, that you will drop a purſuit which " muſt, therefore, have another view."

" You do injuſtice to your daughter" (returned my maſter, recovered from his ſurpriſe, and convinced that it was in vain to diſſemble any longer) " to ſay that ſhe is not upon a " level with any man alive. I am above the " vain pride of family; and as to fortune, my " own ſatisfies me, without hazarding my hap- " pineſs, to ſeek for more."

" Theſe

" Theſe (ſaid the lady's father) are truely the " ſentiments of a gentleman, nor have I any " doubt of the ſincerity with which you de- " clare them. But there are other conſidera- " tions, that make it impoſſible to carry them " into execution. You and my daughter pro- " feſs different principles of religion; and as I " can by no means expect that you ſhould change " your's, ſo, I hope, ſhe is too firmly eſtabliſhed " in her's, to quit them for any worldly honour " or advantage."

This was a ſtroke my maſter was not prepared for. He acquieſced, therefore, ſeemingly, with the beſt grace he could, to avoid entering more explicitly into the ſubject, till he ſhould have time to concert meaſures for getting over this new difficulty, for his honour was now picqued, and he reſolved to ſtop at nothing, if only to puniſh the inſolence of her father, in preſuming to forbid him his houſe.

Accordingly, after revolving a variety of ſchemes, he fixed upon one, which he thought could not fail. Big with this hope, he went next morning to wait upon his miſtreſs, notwithſtanding the interdiction of her father, and finding her alone, after ſome moments of mutual confuſion, on the circumſtances of ſuch a meeting, " I—I—I— I am come, Madam" (ſaid my maſter, heſitating and bluſhing as he ſpoke) " I am come, in conſequence of what

" paſſed

" paſſed between your father and me yeſterday, " of which I preſume he has informed you. " It never was my deſign to diſavow a paſſion, " upon which depends the happineſs of my life. " I only waited till ſome particular circum- " ſtances ſhould enable me to declare it with " more convenience. But, as he has made the " diſcovery, that reſerve is no longer neceſſary. " If, therefore, Madam, I can be ſo happy as " to find favour in your ſight, all his objections, " I preſume, will be removed, by my offering to " marry you directly; on this ſole condition, " that our marriage ſhall be kept inviolably " ſecret, till I have accompliſhed ſome affairs, " to which you muſt be ſenſible the difference " of our religions would be a prejudice. The " ceremony ſhall be performed by any clergy- " man you pleaſe, in the preſence of your father, " and any other witneſſes in whoſe ſecreſy we " can confide, and every thing done that can " convince you of the ſincerity and honour of " my attachment. Speak then, deareſt Madam, " and make me happy, by complying with a " propoſal that has your happineſs in view " equally with my own."

" I ſhould be unworthy of the honour you do " me" (anſwered ſhe, the bluſh of true modeſty heightening the charms of her beauty) " if I " could let it interfere with ſuperiour obliga- " tions. When the approbation of my father

" gives

" gives a proper ſanction to your application to " me, you will probably find no great difficul- " ty in making my inclination go hand in hand " with my duty."——

Her father juſt then entering, relieved her from the embarraſſment of any further converſation upon ſo delicate a ſubject; and ſhe withdrew. But my maſter was under no ſuch difficulty. Encouraged by a reply ſo favourable to his hopes, he directly repeated his propoſal to her father, who promiſed him a deciſive anſwer next morning.

As the manner of his reception left him no room to doubt of his ſucceſs, he went again at the time appointed, when the father gave his conſent without difficulty, as did his miſtreſs, ſtipulating only for a ſhort delay, till ſhe ſhould return from the wedding of a young lady, her couſin, who lived at ſome diſtance in the country, and had engaged her to attend her upon that occaſion. As he could make no juſt objection to this, however diſagreeable ſuſpenſion of his hopes, he conſented with a compliment, that his reſolution was too firmly fixed for any time to make him change it, and then took his leave, exulting at the ſucceſs of his project.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter is privately married. Not ſatisfied with one wife for love, he wants another for money. He propoſes the matter to his wife, on whoſe refuſal, he diſcloſes his grand ſcheme; in which, deep as it is laid, he has the mortification to find himſelf anticipated, and his own weapons turned upon himſelf. Conſequences of this diſcovery.* CHRYSAL's *maſter takes a common method of ſilencing ſcandal.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THE ſmiles of hope make the ſun-ſhine of life; as the mind is then too intent upon the object in expectation, to ſee the inconveniences, which afterwards embitter the enjoyments of it. The abſence of his miſtreſs, though conſiderably longer than he had apprehended, paſſed away pleaſantly in the thought of his approaching happineſs. As ſoon as ſhe returned, therefore, he directly claimed the performance of her promiſe, to which all parties conſenting, they were married by his own chaplain, in the private manner he deſired.

Poſſeſſed thus of his wiſhes, his next care was to enjoy them with the moſt convenience to himſelf. For this purpoſe, he took a houſe next to his own; and opening a ſecret communication between them, he removed her thither,

as

as he could not take her directly home, without declaring his marriage.

Mortifying as the myſterious appearance of ſuch a ſituation muſt have been to her, ſhe made no objection, but complied implicitly, in that and every thing elſe, as if ſhe had no will but his. Paſſions merely ſenſual are ſoon ſated. Though the reſemblance of this intercourſe to an intrigue heightened the pleaſure of it, he had not carried it on long, when an opportunity of marrying to great advantage, in the phraſe of the world, awoke his ambition, and gave his wiſhes another turn.

After ſome little conflict with himſelf, in which, however, the object in view proved too powerful for that in poſſeſſion, he reſolved to break the matter to his wife. Accordingly, as they ſat together one morning at breakfaſt, after ſome expreſſions of uncommon tenderneſs, "The regard which my deareſt girl has al-"ways ſhown for me" (ſaid he, bluſhing at his own baſeneſs as he ſpoke) "convinces me "that ſhe will not only take pleaſure to hear of "any thing to my advantage, but alſo forward "it as far as may be in her power."

"I hope no action of my life" (anſwered ſhe, ſurpriſed at his ſpeaking in ſuch a manner) "ſince I have been married to you, has given "any reaſon to doubt either my duty or affec-"tion, that you ſhould imagine ſuch a preface

" neceſſary to introduce whatever you think " proper to command."

" Very true, my deareſt life. But—but— " but there are ſome things, the nature of " which requires delicacy, even to you, whoſe " underſtanding is ſuperiour to the foibles of " your ſex. You know the young *Lady Worth-* " *land!* I have received intimation that myad- " dreſſes would not be unacceptable to her. " Now, as her rank and fortune would entitle " me to expect the firſt honours in the ſtate, " I have that confidence in the attachment and " love of my deareſt girl, as to think you will " not oppoſe my intereſt."——

" As how?" (replied ſhe eagerly, alarmed at the hint, but unwilling to think ſo meanly of him, as to underſtand it.) " As how! What " intereſt can you poſſibly have in her rank and " fortune?"——

" The intereſt which the law gives an huſ- " band. Poſſeſſion—abſolute poſſeſſion of the " whole."——

" An huſband! Good God! how can that " be? Are you not already married?"——

" True, my deareſt life! But, as that mar- " riage is a ſecret, if it can be kept ſo, it will be " no obſtacle. You ſhall remain, as you are, " the wife of my love; and I will be only the " huſband of her fortune."——

" How you men, whoſe minds are ſtronger, " take pleaſure in playing with the weakneſs of " woman!

" woman! The very mention of ſuch a thing, " even in jeſt (for it is impoſſible you can be " ſerious) ſtrikes me with horrour."——

" In jeſt! I am ſerious, upon my honour; " and expect your immediate compliance, as a " proof of your duty and affection.——

" And can you mention honour in the ſame " breath with ſuch a baſe propoſal? What a " profanation of the word! But, whether you " are ſerious, or not, I muſt be ſo on ſuch an " occaſion; and therefore I declare that I never " will ſacrifice both honour and conſcience, by " giving what you are pleaſed to call a proof " of duty and affection, but what would " really prove that I had neither."——

" This romantick ſpirit, child, much as " you think it becomes you, is all thrown " away. I am determined; and you muſt " ſubmit. But let me tell you, that on the " manner of that ſubmiſſion depends your fu- " ture welfare. If you comply properly with " my propoſal, I will make a ſettlement upon " you, that ſhall exceed any expectations you " could naturally have had in life, and remain " your huſband in every thing but the empty " name. But if you attempt making the leaſt " oppoſition to my will, I caſt you off from " this moment to beggary and ſhame; nor " ſhall any late repentance ever bring me to " receive you again; ſo, conſider the conſe- " quence, before you raſhly run upon your ruin;

"I ſhall expect your final reſolution to-mor-
"row."——

"For that you need not wait a moment.
"I fear no conſequence that can attend my
"doing what is right. The duty of obedience
"I have fulfilled in its utmoſt extent, by im-
"muring myſelf thus, and forfeiting my good
"name to keep your ſecret; but while my con-
"ſcience witneſſed for the purity of my heart,
"I regarded not the preſent cenſure of the
"world, no more than I do now, from the ſame
"principle of virtuous reſolution, your vain
"threats, for in ſuch a light the laws of my
"country enable me to hold them."——

"The laws of your country, madam! Then
"claim their protection, if you pleaſe; but you
"will find that they afford none to you. Such
"marriages as your's, between people profeſſing
"different religions, are made void by thoſe
"laws, and therefore, if you think proper to de-
"pend upon them, I give you this notice, that
"you have nothing to expect from me but
"what they ſhall procure you.——

"And was this your motive" (returned ſhe,
with a ſpirit raiſed by indignation) "for de-
"ſiring a private marriage? Impoſſible! you
"could not, cannot be ſo baſe. You only
"have a mind to try my reſolution, which you
"ſhall ever find immoveable in this, and every
"cauſe of virtue and honour.——

"Madam,

"Madam, I have no more time to trifle in "this manner; therefore, once more I deſire you "to let me know your final determination; for "notwithſtanding this behaviour, I ſtill have "ſuch a regard for you, that I am unwilling to "take an anſwer which muſt ſeparate us for "ever. Think, then, before you ſpeak; and "let my making you this generous offer, and "preventing your expoſing yourſelf in vain, "teach you a proper return of gratitude."—

"I want not a moment to determine between "virtue and vice, infamy and honour."—

"Then take the conſequence; and blame "yourſelf, when it is too late."——

"I will; if any blame falls on me. And now "that I ſee you are ſerious, in return for the "notice you have ſo generouſly given me, "I let you know, that I have obviated the ad- "vantage you flatter yourſelf you have over me, "by conforming *legally* to your religion, before "I was married to you."——

"Confuſion! what is that you ſay? When, "where did you conform?"——

"When I went to the wedding of my couſin, "as you will find upon enquiry, which I adviſe "you to make, before you proceed farther in a "ſcheme, that can only expoſe you to worſe "infamy than that with which you threatened "me."——

"Infernal witch? Was this your love?"—

"No; it was the prudence of my friends.

"My love could harbour no doubt of you; but "they knew you better; and took this honeſt, "wiſe precaution to guard againſt villainy, "which I now am ſenſible they foreſaw; and, "therefore, as you have thought proper to re- "fer me to the law, I now tell you that I will "immediately claim its protection, and declare "my marriage, nor ſuffer any longer in the "opinion of the world, by a ſecrecy that was "enjoined for ſo baſe a purpoſe; by which I "ſhall at leaſt have the ſatisfaction of ſaving "another woman from falling into the ſnare "laid for her."——

Saying this, ſhe flung out of the room, to conceal tears which ſhe thought would betray a weakneſs unworthy of her, and could no longer reſtrain.

The nature of my maſter's meditations on this diſcovery may be eaſily conceived. He curſed that fooliſh fondneſs, which had thus led him blindfold into his own ſnare; and damned all womankind, in revenge for being foiled at his own weapons by one of the ſex.

When he had vented his rage in this manner for ſome time, a ſudden gleam of hope flattered him, that what ſhe ſaid might poſſibly have been only the inſtantaneous ſuggeſtion of reſentment and deſpair, without being really true. Pleaſed with the thought, he ſent directly to make the proper enquiry, the reſult of which confirmed the defeat of all his deſigns. But this

this was not the only mortification he ſuffered. His wife, the moment ſhe left him, went to her father, and diſcovering to him her huſband's baſeneſs, he ſupported her in her reſolution of declaring her marriage, as the moſt proper means to prevent his forming any further ſchemes againſt her.

The conſequence is obvious. The publick received ſuch a curious piece of ſcandal with pleaſure; and paid reſpect to his wife, if only to ſhow contempt for him; particularly the women, who made her's the cauſe of the ſex, as he had precluded all further deſigns upon himſelf, by marriage.

This though, however flattering to her vanity and reſentment at the time, only widened a breach that ſhe wiſhed to cloſe. His pride was picqed to diſappoint her deſign, as ſhe had his, and he left her to languiſh out the reſt of her life in worſe than widowhood, and repent of the folly of attempting to attach to herſelf a man who ſhe knew had betrayed others of the ſex.

As for my maſter, this detection made him deſperate. He threw off every appearance of regard even to common decency, which he thought could no longer be of uſe to him, and determined to bear down ſcandal, by glorying in his vices; in the performance of which gallant reſolution he gave me to a ſtage-dancer, who gave me to an half-pay officer, who gave me to a tavern-keeper, &c.—*Vol.* II. *Page* 98.

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL *gives an account of certain intereſting occurrences. An extraordinary definition of a common word. Great expectations diſappointed. The conſequence of planning in the cloſet the operations of the field, with the origin of that ſagacious practice.*

(CHRYSAL's *maſter, in the courſe of his journey from* VIENNA *to* LISBON, *falls in with one of the armies engaged in carrying on the war.)*

"The army through which my maſter "was obliged to paſs, as I have ſaid, though "paid by *England*, and the flower of it com-"poſed of *Britons*, was commanded by a "*German* general, in diſgraceful acknow-"ledgement of the want of military merit "equal to ſuch a charge in the natives."—— *Vol.* II. *Page* 215.

Such an indignity to a people ever famed in war, and jealous of their honour, muſt appear unaccountable; but the web of human policy is woven in ſo myſterious a manner, as to reconcile inconſiſtencies ſtill harder to be accounted for, on the common principles of reaſon.

When

When this army was firſt formed, the command of it was given to a *Briton*, whoſe military abilities had in their opening dawn ſaved his country from ruin, and now in their meridian promiſed to raiſe his name to an equality of glory with thoſe of moſt renown in the long liſt of heroes; but the wiſdom of thoſe meaſures by which the world is governed defeated expectations ſo juſtly founded, and deprived his country for ever of the advantage of ſuch abilities.

As the profeſſed deſign of this army was only to *obſerve* the motions of the *French*, and defend the allies of *England* from their attacks, it was judged ſufficient to make it barely of ſuch force, as might effect that defenſe, with the aſſiſtance of thoſe allies themſelves. Though an inferiour army may act ſucceſsfully on the defenſive in repelling an immediate aſſault upon itſelf, yet, where its attention is extended to the defenſe of diſtant objects, the neceſſity of dividing ſuch inferiour ſtrength, enhances the diſproportion, ſo as not only to defeat the deſign, but alſo often to involve the defenders in the ruin they were meant to avert from others.

The danger of ſuch an event was evident in the preſent caſe, but ſome diviſions in the *Engliſh* councils made it impoſſible to obviate it, by making the force of the army equal to the

end

end, it was appointed for; certain *patriots* having oppoſed the forming of any ſuch army at all, with ſo plauſible and popular arguments, that the ſovereign was obliged to be ſatisfied, for the preſent, with this ſhadow of one, as I may ſay, in expectation of being able to re-enforce it by degrees, as the *patriots* expected to make their compliance with ſuch a meaſure the means for gaining the end of their patriotiſm, that is, raiſing themſelves to power.

You ſeem ſurpriſed at my calling men who could act with ſuch a view, and oppoſe a meaſure which I have ſaid to be founded on every motive of honour and juſtice, by the reſpectable name of *patriots*. But in this, as in very many other things, the name remains after the idea it was deſigned to repreſent is loſt. *Patriotiſm*, that once meant the nobleſt exertion of diſintereſted virtue, by which every attention to private advantage was ſacrificed to the publick good, ſignifies now no more than an oppoſition to the meaſures of government, whether right or wrong, ſupported by ſuch pretences as are moſt likely to inflame the paſſions of the people, till the governours are ſo embarraſſed, as to be obliged to admit the patriots to a ſhare of their power, when they directly throw off the maſk for ſome other to take up, and do themſelves the very things which they before declaimed againſt with ſuch noiſe and vehemence.

mence. By this general deſcription I do not abſolutely preclude a few particular exceptions; nor deny the merit of ſome men, who even in modern times have deſerved the name, in all the honour of its original meaning.

The nature of ſuch a command, and the improbability of its ſucceſs, would have deterred any man from accepting it, who was not actuated by principles ſo truely patriotick, as to make him diſregard every other motive, for the mere poſſibility of ſerving his country.

As the abilities of the general often make up for the weakneſs of an army, the *Britons* under his command confiding in him, looked upon the ſuperiour force of their enemies with pleaſure, as promiſing them the greater glory. Nor was this confidence without foundation; he had led them to victory before, when they ſcarce deſerved the name of regular forces; and had ſince, with unwearied care, aſſiſted their native valour with every advantage of the moſt judicious diſcipline. Under ſuch a commander, therefore, what might not ſuch troops hope to do? But a difficulty ſtill more diſtreſſing than the inferiority of his force diſappointed all thoſe hopes.

Military operations are ſo complicated, that every motion of an army requires a correſpondent one in that oppoſed to it. The obvious truth of this ſhows the ſagacity of planning in the cloſet the operations of the field. Particular objects

objects, indeed, may be propoſed; but the method of accompliſhing them muſt be left to the judgement of the commander, as occaſion may direct, it being abſolutely impoſſible to foreſee, and provide for all the inſtantaneous contingencies, which muſt make an immediate deviation from any ſyſtem that could have been laid down indiſpenſibly neceſſary. Where this diſcretionary power is abridged, and the motions of a general marked out for him, it muſt be from the fault of his adverſaries, if he performs any thing of conſequence.

The firſt who introduced this ſcheme of ſhackling a commander, were churchmen, who, puffed up by the power which their influence over the weakneſs of princes gave them, diſdained to appear incapable of any thing; and therefore, as their want of military knowledge would not permit their undertaking the actual command of armies, they took this method of ſhowing their abilities and authority, by directing how the commanders of them ſhould proceed; a method, however abſurd in itſelf, ſo flattering to human ſelf-ſufficiency, that princes adopted it after, when age or infirmity prevented their leading their forces into the field.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

Continued. The natural event of ſuch a ſituation. The general, victorious over himſelf, quits the purſuit of military glory for the practice of the virtues of peace. Perfidy of the enemy juſtly puniſhed. The army is formed again under the command of a GERMAN, *and a ſugar plumb given to the* ENGLISH *to ſtop their mouths at ſuch an inſult.*

DISTRESSED more by directions of this kind, than even by the weakneſs of his army, the *Britiſh* general took the field, rather in obedience to his duty than from any hope of ſucceſs, and literally to *obſerve* the motions of an enemy whom he was not able to oppoſe.

The event was as he foreſaw. The enemy, ſuperiour in ſtrength, and at liberty to ſeiſe every advantage, while he could only act in conſequence of orders given at a diſtance, and impoſſible to be always proper, ſoon turned his attention from the defenſe of others to the preſervation of his own army. But even this, the circumſtances he was in made it impoſſible for all his judgement and intrepidity to effect, though diſplayed in a manner that made his name immortal, otherwiſe than by giving up the countries he was ſent to defend, on the beſt terms

terms he could procure, and diſarming his own troops.

Mortifying as ſuch a neceſſity muſt have been to an heart panting for glory, his conduct under it reflected more real honour upon him than any victory gained againſt probability, at the imminent hazard of the loſs of his whole army, could have done, as it ſhowed that he was ſuperiour even to the deſire of fame, when claſhing with the intereſt of his country.

But they who had driven him to this neceſſity, by diſabling him from purſuing the dictates of his own judgement, thought proper to view his conduct in another light, and cenſure in him their own errours. The honeſt indignation of conſcious virtue could not brook treatment ſo diſingenuous. In juſtice to himſelf, therefore, he reſigned all military command, and quitting the profeſſion of arms for ever, devoted the remainder of his days to the practice of every virtue of peace.

As to the countries which he had been thus diſappointed from defending, their troubles ended not ſo eaſily. The enemy, in the inſolence of power, ſoon broke through the terms on which they had been given up, and treated the army, that had ſubmitted to the ſecurity of publick faith with every inſtance of the moſt flagrant injuſtice.

All obligations are mutual. The breach of one party, therefore, diſengages the other.

Provoked

Provoked by ſuch perfidy, the injured army joined the natives, and aroſe with all the fury of revenge upon their oppreſſors. Such attacks are not to be reſiſted. The tyrants were driven out of all their conqueſts; and, to prevent their recovery of them, the army was formed again of force ſufficient to accompliſh the end propoſed, and the command of it given to a *German* of proved abilities, free from the reſtrictions which had made thoſe of the late commander of no effect, his miſcarriage having ſhown the abſurdity of them; and the *Engliſh patriots*, who had before oppoſed the raiſing any ſuch army, having ſucceeded in their views of getting into power, and now aiding the deſign with all their influence; "though to palliate their diſgrace, and to ſatisfy "the jealouſy of the *Engliſh*, they had the ima- "ginary privilege of being immediately under "a commander of their own, and ſubject only "to their own laws, in all things except the "operations of the war, when they were of "neceſſity to obey the *German* commander in "chief."—*Vol.* II. *p.* 215.

FINIS.